

370.92 A583A c.1

Angell, George Thorndike
Autobiographical sketches a
R.W.B. JACKSON LIBRARY

OISE CIR



3 0005 02036 6319



THE LIBRARY

The Ontario Institute
for Studies in Education

Toronto, Canada



LIBRARY

FEB 24 1970

**THE ONTARIO INSTITUTE
FOR STUDIES IN EDUCATION**

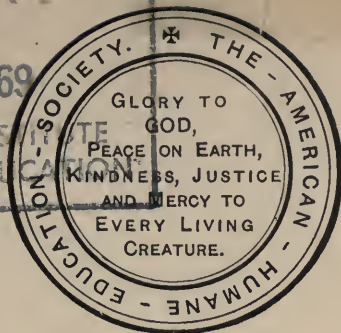


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

LIBRARY

MAR 25 1969

THE ONTARIO INSTITUTE
FOR STUDIES IN EDUCATION



“NIL DESPERANDUM”

(The Writer's Motto Adopted in Youth.)

PUBLISHED BY

“The American Humane Education Society,”

19 MILK STREET, BOSTON.

AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

— AND —

PERSONAL RECOLLECTIONS

BY

GEO. T. ANGELL,

President of the American Humane Education Society, the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the Parent American Band of Mercy, 19 Milk Street, Boston.

PUBLISHED FOR THE USE OF HIS FRIENDS AND ALL WHO CARE
TO READ THEM.

Price at the Society's Offices SIX CENTS. When sent by mail TEN CENTS.

A HIGHER HAND.

“A little boy sat in front of his father, and held the reins that controlled a restive horse. *Unknown to the boy*, the reins passed around him and were also in his father's hands. He saw an occasion to pull them. With artless simplicity the child looked around, saying, ‘*Father, I thought I was driving ; but I am not, am I ?*’ Thus it is often with men who think *they are shaping* a destiny which a *higher hand than theirs* is really directing. They do their own will *because it is also the will of God. A stronger hand guides them ; a mightier power holds the helm of their vessel, and saves from rock and wreck. Happy are they who yield to the guidance of the Almighty hand.*”

	PAGE.
Switzerland	25
The Congress at Zurich	26
Naming "The Animal World"	27
Down the Rhine	27
The First "Animal World"	28
Versailles	28
Italy, Bavaria, Austria, Prussia	29
Hiram Powers	29
Keeping Warm	30
Venice	30
Munich. — Burials of the Dead	30
Vienna	31
Berlin	31
Good-by to Paris	32
John Colam	32
The Ladies' Humane Educational Committee	33
Prizes in Schools	33
Home	33
Last Letter from England	34
One Thing More	36
First "Band of Mercy" in the World	36
Impressions of England	37
Chicago	37
Illinois Humane Society	38
1871	39
First Church in America	39
1872	40
Essay on Cattle-transportation	40
The Check-rein Essay	40
Marriage	40
1873	41
First Law on Overloading	41
United-States Mails in Locked Wagons	41
Five Questions answered	41
Humane Methods of killing Animals	41
First Teachers' Convention in America	41
1874	42
First Lectures and Addresses in America	43
"Protection of Animals"	43
Director of American Social Science	44
1875	44
First College	44

CONTENTS.

vii

	PAGE.
Four Experiences	44
Crime	45
1876	46
Lecture on Crime	46
A New Order of Chivalry	46
The Hayes Election.	47
National Unitarian Conference	47
Experiences at Detroit	48
At Chicago	48
The Smallest Audience	48
1877	49
A Funny Incident	49
Colonization	50
Crimes against Public Health.	50
Marbleized Iron-ware	50
Poisonous Wall-papers	52
Hydrophobia	52
Legions of Honor	53
The Labor Question	53
1878	54
A Busy Year	54
Bleeding Calves	54
Live-Stock Ring	54
Warning the Granges	55
Old Prison at Charlestown	55
Communism	55
Marett Tract	55
The Governor of Vermont	55
Southern Trip. — Baltimore	56
How D. L. Moody helped the Animals	56
Richmond.	57
National Grange	57
President Hayes	58
Washington	58
Monument to Yellow-fever Heroes	58
1879	59
Some of the Hardest Work of my Life	59
The War on Adulteration	59
The Chemists	60
Ten Days in "Boston Herald"	61
What the Papers said	61
Citizens' Trade Association	62

	PAGE.
Shooting Live Pigeons for Sport	62
The Clergy	63
The First Conviction in the World	64
Strike Again	64
Saratoga Humane Society	65
Detroit and Chicago	65
Most Important Evidence	65
Milwaukee	66
Wisconsin Humane Society	66
Minneapolis	66
Ladies' Moral and Humane Education Society	66
1880	67
The War on Adulteration continued	67
The Battle with the Chemists at Saratoga	68
National Grange	69
President Hayes	69
Boston Board of Trade	69
To Washington	69
Why I stopped at Hartford	69
Philadelphia	70
The Campaign at Washington	70
1881	71
Sunshine. — A Society P. C., A.	71
The Yellow-fever Committee	72
Petition to Congress	73
Solid Ground	73
The Reverend Clergy	73
Circulate the Report	74
President Garfield shot	74
Ten Lessons on Kindness to Animals	75
Boston Clergy on Adulteration	75
American Humane Association	76
Vivisection	76
Moral and Humane Education Society	76
Boston Grocers	76
1882	76
Clergy, Grocers, and Law	76
A Narrow Escape for Life	77
"Our Dumb Animals"	78
American Band of Mercy	78
Rev. Thomas Timmins	78
The First Band	78

CONTENTS.

ix

	PAGE
The Governor, Mayor, Chief Justice, etc.	79
Notable Incidents	80
Fox-hunt	80
Mount Auburn	80
1883	80
Protection from Fire	81
Impure Water	82
American Teachers' Bands of Mercy	82
The Happiest Day	82
1884	82
Crowded Streets	83
Philadelphia Police	83
Washington School Committee	84
National Meeting of School Superintendents	84
Three Thousand Boston Drivers	85
1884 (continued)	86
1885	87
1886	88
1887	90
1888	91
1889	92
1890	93
The "Uncle Tom's Cabin" of the Horse	94
"Black Beauty" Attacked	96
1891	98
One hundred and seventeen millions and eighty thousand pages	99
Our Anti-vivisection Friends	100, 102
How the Ellen M. Gifford Fountain Came to be Built	103
The Whole in a Nutshell	104
Thoughts for Teachers and Clergymen	105
"From the Mountains to the Sea"	108
Our Minister to Chili shot, and War inevitable	109
Angel — Angel	110
Preaching the Gospel	110
Neutral Flag	110
Humane Literature	111
Letter to the Presidents of all American Universities and Colleges	112, 114
Autobiography	115
Immortality of Animals	116
Doctors	117
Diaries	117

	PAGE
Sleep	117
Finis	117

APPENDIX CONTENTS.

Photograph and Brief Sketch	1
The Magnitude of our Work	4
Will it Pay ?	6
The Great Problem : the Labor Question	8
In Tremont Temple, Oct. 19, 1881	15
Before the New England Assembly, Aug. 31, 1882	15
Transportation, Slaughtering, Vivisection, and Treatment of Animals in Winter	16
Our Band-of-Mercy Badge	18
My Canary Bird	19
We have lost a Friend	20
One of the Best Friends of our Cause	21
How can we stop Wars ?	21
How to teach God and Immortality	22
The New Order of Mercy ; or, Crime and its Prevention	23
Sentiment, Sentimental	34
Our American Humane Education Society and this Autobiography	35

SECOND APPENDIX CONTENTS.

Addition to our Autobiographical Sketches	1
War with England About the Venezuela Boundary	3
Sepulture of the Living	5
David Was a Very Little Fellow When Compared with Goliath	5
Eighty Thousand	6
A Magnificent Success	6
Personal Opinions	7
In Our Opinion	8
The Power of Money	9
Whom the Gods Would Destroy They First Make Mad	10
From Leading Educators	10
Our Audubon Society	12
A Prominent Boston Lawyer	13
Plans Most Important	14
Vivisection	15
A Writer	15
Two Kinds of Armies	16
An Important Addition	24
Probably the First Church in the World	25
A Prophecy	26
Infernal Intellect	27
The Magnitude of Our Work	28



HAPPY THOUGHTS—IN OUR 75th YEAR.

Many different photographs of the writer of this book have appeared in various American and European publications: the first was in "*The Animal World*," London, June, 1872; the second in "*Our Dumb Animals*," Boston, September, 1879; the above, which is the last, was taken in October, 1897.

Geo. T. Angell

PRESIDENT AND FOUNDER OF "*The American Humane Education Society*,"
PRESIDENT AND ONE OF THE FOUNDERS OF "*The Massachusetts Society for
the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*," PRESIDENT AND ONE OF
THE FOUNDERS OF THE FIRST "*American Band of Mercy*."

AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

I AM now (June, 1883) sixty years of age, and my time pretty fully occupied with public and private duties; but believing I may write some things of interest to my friends, and perhaps of service to others, and which, if I do not write, will never be written, I have concluded to give to their writing such spare moments as I may be able to find.

Thoughtful people, in advanced years, sometimes erect in quiet spots headstones or monuments on which to inscribe words to be read by those who come after them. I believe I can do no better in this direction than to give in this volume, to some extent, my connection with the early history of the protection of animals in America, and some other work I have attempted to do.

I was born at Southbridge, Worcester County, Mass., June 5, 1823.

FATHER.

My father was the Rev. George Angell, formerly of Providence, R.I., but who for many years was pastor of the Baptist Church at Southbridge, which under his care grew from a feeble to a large and prosperous church. He died Feb. 18, 1827, at Southbridge, aged 41, leaving no other child. On his tombstone at Southbridge, erected by his church and society, are engraved these words: "He was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost, and much people was added to the Lord." A sketch of his life will be found in "The Annals of the American Baptist Pulpit," by William B. Sprague, D.D., published by Robert Carter & Brothers, 530 Broadway, New York, in 1860. One experience of my father's was this: Many years before he died, he was taken suddenly and violently ill, was pronounced by his physician dead, and preparations had been made for his funeral and

burial ; when he fortunately regained consciousness. This experience of his has led me to always carry in my pocket a request that I may never be buried until my body begins to decay ; also, to provide, in my will and elsewhere, for a post-mortem examination before burial that shall make death certain.

MOTHER.

My mother was Rebekah Thorndike, youngest daughter of Lieut. Paul Thorndike of Tewksbury, Mass. She was teaching a private school at Worcester, Mass., when she became acquainted with my father. Most of the small property she brought to my father was lost by the failure of a man whom they had trusted ; and after his death she again taught private schools for young ladies in Salem, Mass., and various other places, and otherwise exerted herself to maintain us both, and educate me. She was distinguished for charitable deeds and religious devotion. During a large part of her life, it was her custom to spend two hours daily in silent prayer in a room by herself alone. *No man ever had a better mother.* A sketch of her life, written by her pastor, will be found in "The Christian Watchman and Reflector," Boston, Mass., Aug. 6, 1868. He says, "Her ruling passion was to do good, and many are the poor who will rise up and call her blessed." She died June 15, 1868, at Townsend, Vt., aged seventy-nine years, eight days, and was there buried.

BOYHOOD.

As my father left little property, and it became necessary for my mother to teach, and otherwise constantly exert herself as before stated, I was during boyhood kept much of the time in various country places in Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and Vermont, with relatives, friends, and others. When about fourteen years old, a place was obtained for me in a large dry-goods house in Boston, where I remained about two years and a half. My mother then determined to endeavor to give me a college education ; and I was placed at an academy at Meriden, N.H. (that being a school where the expenses were very small), to fit for college. I fitted there for college, and entered Brown University at Providence, R.I., in the fall of 1842. Here I remained one year, when finding that the expenses were more than I could afford, and that I could not be permitted to teach winters, I went to Dartmouth College, and remained there the succeeding three years, graduating July 30, 1846. While in college, I devoted a large portion of my time to reading, writing, and speaking. During my junior year I presided over one of the large college soci-

eties, numbering about one hundred and fifty students; one of my duties being, at the close of each weekly discussion, to review the arguments presented, and decide the question.

I was also, in company with some half-dozen of my class, elected a member of the "Alpha Delta Phi" Society, well known to college students in the United States, and gave much time to the exercises of that society. By teaching school winters, and with what help my good mother was able to give me, I succeeded, by great economy, in getting through college with a debt of between two and three hundred dollars to a wealthy relative, Mr. James P. Thorndike of Boston, which, from the money first earned, I paid in full with interest.

After graduation I spent a few weeks with my mother, who was then residing in Vermont, writing to persons in various States to find some suitable employment.

SEEKING FORTUNE.

Failing in this, I started in the night stage, Monday evening, Aug. 31, 1846, with a mother's blessing, and a little money furnished by her, to seek my fortune. I had wealthy and influential relatives in Massachusetts, but felt unwilling to ask their assistance, preferring to paddle my own canoe. On my way to Boston, I stopped at several places with no success. But on my arrival at that city, a good uncle in Salem without solicitation offered me a place in his law-office, and board in his family; and the Hon. Richard Fletcher, judge of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, a cousin of my mother's, soon after aided me in obtaining a situation as teacher in a Boston school, and offered me the use of his law library. I taught about three years, day-times, and studied law nights and vacations, except that for about one year, because of overwork, I could use my eyes but very little.

During this time I had paid my college debt with interest, partly supported my good mother, and had accumulated about twelve hundred dollars. The next two years I passed in the office of Charles G. Loring, Esq., one of the most eminent lawyers and counsellors of Boston, and at the Harvard University Law School. I was admitted to the bar, Dec. 17, 1851. Very soon after, through the kind recommendation of Mr. Loring, I was offered a three-years' partnership with Benjamin F. Brooks, Esq., one of the most successful lawyers of the Suffolk bar; and soon afterwards, through the kindness of Judge Fletcher, I was offered a partnership with the Hon. Samuel E. Sewall, a very learned and eminent member of the same bar. Mr. Sewall was a prominent abolitionist, had been for several years abolition

candidate for governor, and was at that time unpopular with all who believed in sustaining American slavery. I was told that if I became his partner, my prospects as a lawyer would be ruined, as Boston merchants would never employ an abolitionist. I concluded to try it, and, as I am now satisfied, was more successful than I should have been if I had chosen the other partnership.

It was the wish of Judge Fletcher, that I should become a *jury* lawyer, and I was quite successful in the first cases I tried; but soon found that my nervous temperament, and habit of thinking over cases all night, which I could not get rid of, was too wearing, and so turned my attention to building up an *office* practice. In this I was successful, and soon found myself able not only to support liberally my good mother, furnishing her every thing she desired, but to live very comfortably myself, give something to charities, and yet accumulate money much beyond my previous anticipations.

A PLEASANT PARTNERSHIP.

After a most pleasant and harmonious partnership of fourteen years, during which I cannot remember a single unpleasant word or deed of my most excellent partner, wishing to be less closely confined to business I dissolved with Mr. Sewall, and, continuing to occupy with him the same offices, took in a junior partner, with whom I continued nine years more, when I substantially abandoned my profession, and have since devoted myself to works of a public nature, in which I have attempted to accomplish good, but from which I have neither sought nor received any pecuniary compensation.

INCIDENTS OF LAW PRACTICE.

Among many interesting incidents of my practice as a lawyer, I will mention some of the first. A poor but very good-looking Irish girl was engaged to a young Irishman, and they were about to be married; when suddenly he left her, and married another, very much older than himself, but who had several hundred dollars in a savings bank. Mr. Loring, with whom I had studied, sent her to my office. As the law then stood, the money of a wife became the husband's on marriage. I sued the man for breach of promise, and attached the wife's money in the savings bank. The result was, that he got the old lady for a wife, and the girl got pretty much all the money which led him to desert her.

One of our most promising young surgeons, with wise judgment, amputated a crushed toe. A rival physician, whose practice was being endangered, put up the man to sue for five thousand dollars

damages, and to employ the distinguished Rufus Choate as counsel. I was employed for the defence, and retained as senior William Whiting, an able lawyer.

Mr. Choate was prevented by other duties from trying the case; but another eminent man, R. H. Dana, took his place. It was a three-days' trial, and attracted great attention from the medical profession, many of whom attended.

After we had won the verdict, I went to the foreman of the jury, and explained that a verdict for a professional man, sued for malpractice, could never make him whole again: people would always suspect something wrong. The result was, the whole jury signed a paper, that my client was not only not in fault, but had, in their judgment, acted with the highest surgical skill. With this I went to the opposing counsel, who were preparing a statement of the case for the newspapers, and proposing to move for a new trial. The paper signed by the jury upset their plans; and the result was, that they, too, signed a letter to the doctor, saying they were satisfied the verdict was correct. These I had published in every Boston daily paper; and they gave the doctor, as I was told, a standing in the profession he could not have obtained otherwise by years of practice. I count this one of the very few cases in which a professional man has been benefited by a suit for malpractice.

About this time a large estate was put into my hands to settle. One of its largest claims was in the hands of a prominent Ogdensburg, N.Y., lawyer, who kept writing, in answer to my letters, that it was good, and would be settled soon. After this had gone on about a year, I sent up a man to get the money. He came back with the same story, "Good, and be settled soon." I thought I would go myself; so one day I dropped in on this prominent lawyer, to find a smiling reception and the same old story, "Good, and be settled soon." I told him I was going down the St. Lawrence River the next morning, and expected to have the money before I went. He didn't see how it was possible, as the man — whom I had found to be his partner's father-in-law — was at Saratoga Springs. I said, "It's very simple: I am going to your banks and large mercantile houses, show them your letters, and offer to sell at a small discount." He thought a moment, and said he would take it himself; then invited me to tea, and made me as welcome as a king.

In settling the same estate, a Chicago lawyer had collected a large claim, but would not pay over. I wrote, giving him some days to forward the money; if not then received, a letter to be sent to every member of the Chicago bar, stating the circumstances, and asking if they knew any way to collect. The money came on time.

The fact coming to my knowledge, early in my professional practice, that several wills had been lost or destroyed, led me to adopt the plan of draughting all wills in duplicate; the extra cost of simply copying being very small, and the extra security of having two, in different places, much greater. It has been my custom through life, to keep in different places duplicate copies of important papers. I have frequently found this a source of much convenience, particularly in the great Chicago fire, when the records of various deeds I held were destroyed.

If I were writing a book for lawyers, I should be glad to speak of other matters which might be useful to young men entering the profession.

I think the two most fascinating men I ever met in my professional practice were Ole Bull and Max Maretzek. The latter was almost always in debt; and for some years, every time he came to Boston, claims against him were sent me for collection. Our interviews were always pleasant. With payment of the last, he presented me free tickets to best seats for the entire opera season, and said, — “Now, Mr. Angell, if you ever have another claim against me, I wish you would tell me, so that I can run away.”

INCIDENTS IN TEACHING.

Among the incidents of my experience as a teacher, are two which may be of service.

In the winter of 1845–46, I agreed to teach a school in Southern Massachusetts, where previous masters had much trouble. On my way to take the school, I bought several dollars' worth of beautifully colored letter-paper, various colors; and almost the first day of the school proposed to present, at the end of every week, to each scholar who had maintained a good record, several sheets of this paper, sufficient to give each, at the end of the winter, enough for a beautiful album, permitting them to draw lots for colors. The result was, I governed that school very easily the entire winter, with a few dollars' worth of colored letter-paper; and at the end, in addition to various valuable presents from the scholars, I received, by unanimous vote of the school committee, a considerable balance of money left in the treasury.

The other was in connection with the school I taught in Boston, — one of the hardest in the city, — while studying my profession. Without asking anybody's leave, I adopted the plan of dismissing every boy who had behaved well, a quarter of an hour before the end of school, both forenoon and afternoon; thus giving them half an

hour each day. The plan worked admirably, and I never heard from parent or school-committee the slightest objection.

CLASS HISTORY.

In 1863 a committee of my college classmates prepared a history of our class, to that point, in which they put the following:—

GEORGE THORNDIKE ANGELL.

NAT. JUNE 5, 1823, SOUTHBRIDGE, MASS.

PRESENT RESIDENCE, BOSTON, MASS.

Immediately after graduation Mr. Angell obtained a situation in the Mather Grammar School in Boston, and about the same time commenced reading law, at intervals, in the office of Hon. Richard Fletcher. In the fall of 1849 he gave up his connection with the school, and entered the law office of Charles G. Loring, Esq., and for two years pursued the study of the law at the Cambridge Law School, and with Mr. Loring. He was then admitted to the bar of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, and was immediately received into the law office of Hon. Richard Fletcher and Hon. Samuel E. Sewall, with whom he was associated in business, pleasantly and profitably. Subsequently he formed a law partnership with Mr. Sewall, under the name of Sewall & Angell. This firm still continues, and does a lucrative business in the highest courts of the State.

He has received the appointment of Commissioner, resident in Massachusetts, from every State and Territory in the Union. He has never been married; has kept entirely aloof from politics, and devoted himself entirely to his business.

He enjoys, in an eminent degree, the confidence of his professional brethren and of the community in which he resides.

FONDNESS FOR ANIMALS.

It is proper for me here to say, that from my childhood I had been extremely fond of animals,—dogs, horses, cats, cattle, sheep, birds, all these and many others. I had seen, and personally interfered in, a number of cases of cruelty to them, and had heard of many others. I did not know that there was such a thing in the world as a “society for the prevention of cruelty to animals,”—the nearest being in London, Eng.,—but I thought something should be done for their protection.

WILL.

So, in 1864, two years before the forming of the first society in America by Henry Bergh of New York, I gave by will a considerable portion of my property to be used after my death in “circulating in schools, Sunday schools, and elsewhere,” information calculated to

prevent such cruelty. This will was executed Aug. 22, 1864, in the presence of W. R. P. Washburn, William H. Simpson, and Horatio G. Parker as witnesses; and the clause relating to animals reads as follows:—

“It has long been my opinion, that there is much wrong in the treatment of domestic animals; that they are too often overworked, overpunished, and, particularly in winter and in times of scarcity, underfed. All these I think great wrongs, particularly the last; and it is my earnest wish to do something towards awakening public sentiment on this subject; the more so, because these animals have no power of complaint, or adequate human protection, against those who are disposed to do them injury. I do therefore direct that all the remainder of my property not herein before disposed of shall, within two years after the decease of my mother and myself, or the survivor, be expended by my trustees in circulating in common schools, Sabbath schools, or other schools, or otherwise, in such manner as my trustees shall deem best, such books, tracts, or pamphlets as in their judgment will tend most to impress upon the minds of youth their duty towards those domestic animals which God may make dependent upon them.”

CRUELITIES.

The cruelties then practised in Massachusetts would fill a long chapter. It is not necessary to give many of them here. I will mention a few.

Calves taken from their mothers when too young to eat hay were carted through our streets, and lay in heaps at the cattle-markets, tied, and piled on each other like sticks of wood; and they were bled several times before they were killed, to make their flesh look whiter and more delicate. Sheep, from which their fleeces had been taken, stood, in cold weather, about the slaughter-yards shivering for days before they were killed. Nothing had been done to lessen the horrors of cattle transportation. Old horses, long past service, were whipped up and down the streets of Brighton, and sold sometimes for thirty-seven and a half cents each. Worn-out and aged horses, dogs, and other animals were ignorantly and thoughtlessly killed, in ways most brutal. A man in my town near Boston, who had mortgaged his stock of cattle to another, quarrelled with him, locked the stable-doors, and starved them all to death in their stalls to prevent his getting his pay. *There was no law in Massachusetts to punish him!*

HORSE-RACE.

But on Saturday, Feb. 22, 1868, came a great horse-race, in which two of the best horses of the State were driven from Brighton to Worcester, about forty miles, over rough roads, each drawing two men, and were both driven to death.

When I saw in "The Boston Daily Advertiser" of Monday, Feb. 24, the record of this cruel race, my determination was at once taken. I had heard that Mr. Bergh had started a society in New York. I said to myself, "Somebody must take hold of this business, and I might as well as anybody;" and I immediately sat down, and wrote the following letter to "The Boston Daily Advertiser," which appeared in its columns the next morning, Feb. 25, 1868:—

CRUELTY TO ANIMALS.

TO THE EDITORS OF "THE BOSTON DAILY ADVERTISER."

In your paper of this morning, I see that the race on Saturday terminated in the death of the winning horse. [I had not then heard of the death of the other.] I find also that the horse was driven over the rough roads of that day the whole distance from Boston to Worcester, *and drawing two men*, at an average speed of fifteen and two-sevenths miles per hour. It seems to me that it is high time for somebody to take hold of this matter in earnest, and see if we cannot do something in Boston, as others have in New York, to stop this cruelty to animals. And I wish further to say through your columns, that I, for one, am ready to contribute both time and money; and if there is any society or person in Boston, with whom I can unite, or who will unite with me, in this matter, I shall be glad personally or by letter to be informed.

GEORGE T. ANGELL,
46 Washington Street.

Boston, Feb. 24, 1868.

On the morning this appeared, I was called upon by Mrs. William Appleton, Mr. C. Allen Browne, E. B. Welch, William G. Weld, Charles K. Whipple, R. F. Walcutt; received letters from Franklin Evans, John J. May, and Samuel G. Howe, and the next morning from George B. Emerson, Amos A. Lawrence, and others; and at once found myself in a work to which I have deemed it a duty and privilege to give a large portion of my time and thoughts ever since. Some thousands of dollars directly, and many thousands indirectly in the gradual giving-up of a somewhat lucrative profession and neglecting other pecuniary interests.

MRS. WILLIAM APPLETON.

Mrs. William Appleton, who called the first morning, and to whom more than any other lady in Massachusetts is the success of our society due, at once told me that she had for several months been trying to start a society in Boston. She had seen Mr. Bergh, had obtained the signatures of some ninety of her influential friends and acquaintances to a paper, agreeing to become patrons of a society when formed, and had herself draughted from the New-York form, and put

into the hands of the Speaker of the House of Representatives then in session, an Act for incorporation. On Feb. 29, four days after the publication of my letter, I put in the various Boston papers an appeal for funds, signed by myself, Mrs. Appleton, and various of her and my friends. I called upon the Speaker for Mrs. Appleton's Act of incorporation. He could not find it then (though he did subsequently), but said that if I expected the Legislature would pass a law to prevent cruelty to animals, he thought I was mistaken, as he thought the Legislature would not enact such a law. The fact was, that the prevention of cruelty to animals was then a very new thing in this country, and neither he nor the Legislature knew quite so much about it as they did afterwards. I then drew a new Act of incorporation, in which I put the names of Hon. William Gray, Samuel G. Howe, and my own. I should certainly have put in the name of Mrs. William Appleton, but public opinion had not then reached the point when it was deemed judicious to make this use of a lady's name. Indeed, Mrs. Appleton did not think it proper to even attend the meeting at which our society was organized; and at our first election of directors, it was deemed (singular as it now seems) improper to elect her a director, and so we elected her husband, Mr. William Appleton, and conferred upon her all the honor we thought we could by electing her our first honorary member. I am happy to say that in 1871 public opinion had so far progressed, that we unanimously elected her our first (and, at that time, only) lady director, an office which she has held ever since with great profit to the society.

From this time to March 24, I devoted my time to pushing the Act of incorporation, writing a series of letters to our various Boston papers, and getting all the names we could gather to aid the society's formation. On March 23, I obtained the Act of incorporation, which reads as follows:—

ACT OF INCORPORATION.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

In the Year One Thousand Eight Hundred and Sixty-eight.

AN ACT TO INCORPORATE THE MASSACHUSETTS SOCIETY FOR THE PREVENTION OF CRUELTY TO ANIMALS.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:

SECTION 1. William Gray, Samuel G. Howe, George T. Angell, their associates and successors, are hereby made a corporation by the name of *The Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*, with all the powers and privileges, and subject to all the duties, liabilities, and restrictions, set forth

in all general laws which now are or hereafter may be in force relating to such corporations; with authority to hold real and personal estate, for the purposes of the corporation, not exceeding in amount one hundred thousand dollars.

SECT. 2. This Act shall take effect upon its passage.

Passed to be enacted.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, March 19, 1868.

HARVEY JEWELL, *Speaker*.

Passed to be enacted.

IN SENATE, March 20, 1868.

GEO. O. BRASTOW, *President*.

Approved.

March 23, 1868.

ALEX. H. BULLOCK.

A true copy.

SECRETARY'S DEPARTMENT, BOSTON, March 23, 1868.

OLIVER WARNER,
Secretary of the Commonwealth.

NOTE.—The Massachusetts Society was the second incorporated in America, Mr. Bergh's New-York Society being the first. The Pennsylvania Society obtained their charter soon after the Massachusetts.

ORGANIZATION OF MASSACHUSETTS SOCIETY.

In the daily papers of March 24, appeared a call for a meeting, signed by Messrs. Gray, Howe, and myself, at my offices, 46 Washington Street, March 31, 1868, at 3 o'clock P.M., to organize the society. In the mean time I wrote a constitution and by-laws, which with, I believe, the alteration of only one word, were unanimously adopted, and have been our chart and guide ever since. When the hour of meeting arrived, upwards of forty persons were present; and, my offices being inconveniently crowded, we adjourned to the hall overhead. Hon. William Gray was chosen chairman, and Russell Sturgis, jun., Esq., secretary *pro tem*. I gave an address; the constitution and by-laws were adopted; a proper paper, prepared by me, was presented for signatures of those who would join, and forty-three persons signed it, most of them as life-members; and sixteen directors were elected, as follows:—

Directors.

GEORGE T. ANGELL.	JOHN QUINCY ADAMS.	THOMAS CONERY.
SAMUEL G. HOWE.	W. W. MORLAND.	FRANKLIN EVANS.
WILLIAM GRAY.	THOMAS MOTLEY.	JOHN REED.
RUSSELL STURGIS, JUN.	D. D. SLADE.	WILLIAM G. WELD.
GEO. TYLER BIGELOW.	GEORGE NOYES.	WILLIAM APPLETON.
HENRY SALTONSTALL.		

Among these will be recognized some of the best-known and most distinguished names of Boston.

In this the Society's seventeenth year, only three, with myself, remain ; and only one, Mr. George Noyes, — then, as now, the editor and proprietor of "The Massachusetts Ploughman," and the Society's constant and earnest friend, — still continues, with me, to regularly attend our meetings, and join actively in our work.

Amos A. Lawrence — than whom no better could be found — consented to act as our treasurer ; one hundred vice-presidents, with his Excellency the Governor — Alexander H. Bullock — at their head, were chosen ; Russell Sturgis, jun., Esq., consented to act temporarily as honorary secretary ; and I was unanimously elected to the office of president, which, by seventeen succeeding unanimous elections, I have now held nearly seventeen years. At the close of the meeting, Mr. Sturgis went with me to my office underneath the hall ; and, with a deep sense of the great work we believed we had that day inaugurated, we knelt, and asked God's blessing. Full accounts of this meeting will be found in Boston papers of April 1, 1868.

The next thing was to draught, and present to the Legislature, a suitable law ; *our statutes being then such that any man or woman could starve his or her horse or cow to death, without fear of punishment.* I draughted what seemed to me a suitable law, which, after being considered and perfected by consultation with Chief Justice Bigelow of our Supreme Judicial Court (one of our directors), and the Hon. William Gray (another director), in company with them, I presented to, and argued before, the Judiciary Committee of our Senate, on April 7, 1868, reports of which will be found in Boston papers of April 8, 1868.

The next few weeks were devoted to pushing this law through the Legislature, by seeing members and writing letters to Boston papers ; also to gathering new members, in which work Mrs. Appleton, from her large acquaintance with wealthy and influential citizens, rendered most valuable service ; also to fitting up offices for the Society, in the same building with my own, and connecting with them by speaking-tube. It was already pretty clear to my mind, that I was entering upon a life-work ; and my plans reached far beyond any thing that I could learn had been thus far undertaken. I saw that we should need not only a State society, but prosecuting agents, and, so far as possible, branches in some form in almost every city and town ; and that, while enforcement of laws might do something, humane education would be a thousand times more important, both for the protection of animals and for its effects on the human race. With this feeling, I closed the appeal published in Boston papers, signed by Mr. Gray, Mr. Sturgis, and myself, with these words : " *The Society*

has a great work before it; and it earnestly asks the aid and prayers of every man and woman in Massachusetts who believes in God, and has sympathy for his suffering creatures." And then I set to work to see how we could increase our funds and membership.

ALMOST PROVIDENTIAL.

Here occurred what seemed almost a providential interposition. I was going down Washington Street, full of my thought, when I passed a man connected with our police, whom I had not seen for months. Something seemed to say to me, "*That man can help you.*" I turned quickly, overtook him, tapped him on the shoulder, told him my trouble, and asked him where I could get the right men to canvass the city of Boston. He said at once that there were most excellent men on the police-force, who could be spared as well as not, if permission could only be obtained to use them. On this suggestion, I went to the mayor, the chief of police, the chairman of the police committee of aldermen, and the city attorney, all of whom I knew personally; and the result was, that seventeen policemen, picked from the whole force, clothed in their best uniforms, were put under my orders on April 15, 1868, for three weeks, reporting to me daily, *to canvass the entire city, at the city's expense, to raise funds for our society.* I addressed them, furnished them with blank-books, assigned to each his district, and thus canvassed the whole city, obtaining thus probably about twelve hundred of the about sixteen hundred members and patrons with whom we began our work.

And here another circumstance which seemed providential occurred. The opposition candidate for mayor would, as it afterward appeared, have stopped our work in a day if he had known any thing about it; but, as good fortune would have it, he was one of the very last men called upon by the police, and the canvass was closed before he knew it, and we had in our treasury about thirteen thousand dollars.

"OUR DUMB ANIMALS"—THE FIRST OF ITS KIND.

On May 14 our law, having been enacted by both branches of the Legislature, was approved by the governor; and on May 15 I obtained a copy for publication. On May 20 I called a meeting of the directors, and laid before them my plans, and the reasons for starting a paper through which we could speak every month to our friends and the people of the State, and which I would undertake without expense to edit. They assented, and then asked, "How many shall we print of the first number?" — "*Two hundred thousand,*" I answered. "*How much will it cost?*" — "*Between two and three thou-*

sand dollars.” They were startled, but finally agreed ; and on June 2, 1868, I issued an edition of two hundred thousand copies of “Our Dumb Animals,” *the first paper of its kind in the world.*

And here comes in another incident which seemed almost providential. I wanted to send a copy of that paper into every home in the Commonwealth, but it would cost a great deal of money to do it. How could it be done ?

I called again upon our good mayor, Dr. Shurtleff, and asked that the police, on their regular beats, should leave one copy in each house in Boston. “He would be glad to help me, *but this opposition candidate for mayor*, who was then an alderman, had almost got a vote of censure upon him for letting us have the police ; had obtained an order that the Boston police should never be again employed to canvass for a charitable society ; and would certainly prevent the police distributing our paper.” So said the mayor, so said the chief of police, and so said all of them. I said, “I will see this Alderman ——.” I went to the reading-room under the Old State House, thinking to find him there, but did not. Rushing out on the south side, I almost ran over a gentleman passing. He stopped, and I apologized. It was Mr. John J. May of Boston, who responded the first day to my letter proposing to form a society, and afterwards became one of our directors. He asked how I was getting along with the new society. I told him my trouble with Alderman —— . “Alderman —— !” said he ; “Alderman —— is my particular, intimate friend. I will go directly to his office, and make him offer an order at the board-meeting this afternoon, that the police shall distribute your paper in every house in Boston.” He went directly to Alderman ——’s office. Alderman ——, in the board that afternoon, offered the order ; and over thirty thousand copies of our paper were thus gratuitously distributed, in nearly every house in Boston, by the police.

With the example of Boston, I succeeded in getting the same distribution made by the police in other cities. To reach towns, I obtained from our Boston postmaster, Gen. William L. Burt, a letter to all country postmasters, asking them to distribute our paper in their various localities ; and many were distributed by members of the Legislature ; and in these ways, without other expense than a moderate sum for expressage and correspondence, we succeeded in sending it widely into almost every town in the Commonwealth.

AGAIN PROVIDENTIAL.

I will mention another incident which at the time seemed to me providential. I thought it very important, in this edition of two hundred thousand, to give some account of the horrible cruelties practised in and about the Brighton slaughter-houses. But at the last moment, just as I was going to press, the two men upon whom I had relied, fearing personal danger, backed out, and would furnish me nothing.

Just then, almost at the last moment, a tall, stern-looking man came into my office, and said, "You are forming a society to prevent cruelty to animals, ain't you?" I said, "Yes." — "Well," said he, "I'll join;" and he took out ten dollars, and handed me. I thanked him, and said, "What name, sir?" He gave me his name. "And where can we send our publications to you?" — "Brighton." — "Brighton," said I: "perhaps you know something about those Brighton slaughter-houses." — "Well, I should think I ought to," said he. "I've run one on 'em about twenty years; and I've done cruelty enough to animals, and now I'm going to see if I can't do 'em some good."

In the state of mind I was in just then, the tears came into my eyes; and I said to him, "*Who do you suppose sent you here?*" "Well," said he, "I kind of thought I would come in." I said, "I know who sent you: now please sit down;" and he gave me the very information I wanted, just in time to print two hundred thousand copies for circulation through the State, and to aid in abolishing that whole abominable system which has now given way to our splendid abattoir. I was told afterwards, by those who knew this man, that it was nothing less than a miracle; for he was never known to give any thing before in his life.

DEATH.

About this time my good mother, then in Vermont, in her eightieth year suddenly died. I was then unmarried. She was my only living relative nearer than cousin, and it had often seemed to me that I could not bear the affliction which would come upon me when she should die. But kind Providence had so ordered that her death came at just the time when my whole brain and heart were so full of this great work, and its demands upon me so pressing, that I had comparatively little time to think of my own personal loss. A singular circumstance is here worth relating. My mother died on June 15, 1868. I did not receive the telegram until the 16th. On the evening of the 15th I went home in usual health, and started for a ride on horse-

back ; my mother being over a hundred miles distant in Vermont, and, so far as I knew, in ordinary health. Suddenly I was taken with a terrible faintness and sickness. I hurried home, told my landlady that I didn't know what was the matter with me, but I had never felt so before, — my appetite all gone ; only a terrible feeling of faintness and sickness. It passed off by degrees. Next day I received the telegram, and learned that at the very time this sickness came upon me, about 6.30 P.M., my good mother, over a hundred miles away, was dying.

THE POWER OF HOPE.

Two other incidents relating to my mother here occur to me as showing the power of hope, and the importance of cheering the sick, instead of saying, "*How feeble you look!*" etc., and otherwise only adding to the troubles they already have to contend with. Oct. 16. 1854, at 10.30 P.M., I received a telegram that my mother in Vermont was at the point of death. I took the first train to Brattleborough ; then as good a horse as I could find, eighteen miles to the little village among the hills, where she was residing. I had learned by my own personal experiences, that doctors are sometimes mistaken. In one case, for instance, a quite noted doctor had told me that I had a fever, and should not be able to leave my bed for two weeks. I discharged him on the spot, took a powerful dose of cathartic, and the next day went to his office, and paid his bill. In another, one of the most distinguished eye-doctors of Boston, promising to get me out in a fortnight, kept me six weeks in great suffering and weakness, and almost total darkness, and then told me it would take him six weeks more to get me out. I discharged him, took the case into my own hands, and by simply reversing his treatment got out evenings in about a week, and went to Vermont in about a fortnight. I took things to strengthen, not deplete, and began bringing my eyes to the light instead of shutting them out from it. But whether the doctor in this case of my mother's was mistaken, or not, I determined, God willing, that, if I found her alive, I would save her. What effect prayers have, God only knows ; but I am sure I never prayed more earnestly in my life than I did for her recovery. I arrived in the afternoon ; and, as I drove up to the door, a lady came out, and I said, "Is my mother alive?" — "Yes," was the answer, "but just about to die." I strode into the sick-room, and found there, around her bed, a large delegation of the church, singing the farewell hymns, and offering the farewell prayers. I spoke to her ; and she said in a feeble but pleasant voice, "You have come, George, to see me die." — "Oh,

no!" said I, "not at all. I have arranged all my business, and have come up to spend a fortnight; and am going to take right hold, and have every thing straightened out, and you get well." (This was the substance of what I said.) But her mind was so fixed on dying, that she seemed determined to die. So I said, "*Mother, if it is God's will that you should live, — if he has something more for you to do in the world, are you willing to live?*" — "Yes," she said, "*if it is God's will, I am willing.*" — "Then," I said, "we will take the means." I dismissed the church brothers and sisters in about five minutes, and put up a notice on the door that nobody could be admitted. I had every noise in the house at once stopped. I sent about forty miles for a lady friend of my mother's, a good nurse, to come without fail by next train, as it was a case of life or death. I sent about a hundred miles for her clergyman, to whom she was much attached, to come home at once. I sent sixteen miles over the hills for a noted physician. Mother had for several weeks been unable to take nourishment except by injections; and they had tried in vain to get ice, which it was thought her stomach might bear. I directed the stable-keeper to harness a horse, and start for ice, and not to show himself in town again until he brought it, if he had to go to Boston. The result was, the nurse, the minister, the doctor, and the ice all came; and my good mother, who would probably have died that night if I had not reached her, just six weeks and two days afterwards, on Nov. 30, was with me in Boston at church, and eating her Thanksgiving dinner.

Four years later, June 9, 1858, I was called again by telegram, and as before hurried to Vermont, to find that she had been engaged, now in her seventieth year, in a great revival; had overworked herself; had fallen, and lain for hours in a fit, on coming out of which she had lost most of her mental faculties, could remember hardly any thing, and could only lie in bed moaning. I watched her one day, and then decided that the only hope was to change her surroundings. The doctor thought she would probably die anyway. I ordered a barouche from Brattleborough, eighteen miles distant, — that being the nearest railway-station, — into which I contrived to put her, and with a nurse started for my native town in Southern Massachusetts. She knew so little, that she thought the first station from Brattleborough was Springfield. In the saloon of the car, we brought her at night into Springfield depot, and took her at once to the famous Massasoit Hotel, where I told the landlord it was a case of life or death, and I must have the best in his house. He gave me every thing I could wish; and when, in the spacious room with a cheerful

fire burning, I put before her the first strawberries she had seen that season, a new light seemed to dawn in her eyes. The next day she was better, and we reached kind friends in my native town. Gradually her lost faculties returned, and she lived ten years longer to her eightieth year. I am clearly of opinion that in both these cases the change of surroundings acting upon her mind, and inspiring a belief in recovery, accomplished what could never have been accomplished by the power of medicine.

PROSECUTING-AGENTS AND WRITERS.

My next step in our humane work was in pursuance of my original plan, to begin the finding of suitable persons in every city and town of the State, who would act as prosecuting-agents of the Society. This was a work of no small difficulty, and not perfected until long after. I also wrote a large number of letters to leading literary men and women of the country, — poets, clergymen, writers, editors, and lecturers, — to enlist their pens and voices. Some of them responded nobly; among the first, Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, in an article of great interest, widely published. I caused our paper to be sent to various parts of our own and other countries, and particularly, each month, to a large number of newspapers in our own and other States, also to judges and magistrates. This gave our work a very wide circulation, and prepared the way for the proper enforcement of our law.

FIRST PROSECUTION.

The first case we had occasion to prosecute was for overloading a horse, and a perfectly clear case of cruelty; but the wealthy man who opposed us brought men to swear that a horse *of the weight* of this one could easily have pulled the load; *and on that ground* the judge ruled against us. In the Boston "Transcript" I at once reviewed the judge's decision, and showed *the fallacy of supposing that all horses of the same weight, whether old or young, weak or strong, sick or well, half-starved or fed, or the day hot or cold, could uniformly pull the same load.* I showed there was the same difference in horses as men, and that what one horse or man of given weight could do was no evidence of what another of the same weight ought to. This was the first case under a new and untried law. The same judge has since been one of our best friends; and my hastily written letter was adopted by Bishop, in his work on "Statutory Crimes," as sound law, and is, I believe, now so considered.

HEALTH.

The work was all new, correspondence very large. No society in the world had then undertaken plans like ours. And so it happened that my time was fully occupied, not only week-days but Sundays; and my nights were any thing but restful, for when I retired it was with candle, paper, and pencil in a chair at my side, to minute down thoughts that came in the night. My health, never of the strongest, of course suffered.

I continued editing "Our Dumb Animals" nine months, giving it my best thought, publishing during that time about three hundred and fifty thousand copies; and felt well rewarded for my labor of love, when, at our first public annual meeting in Boston Music Hall, Governor Claflin said, that "no more interesting paper came to his table."

In the editorials of those first nine months will be found, I think, pretty much the substance of all I have since said and written on this subject.

In December, if I remember rightly, Messrs. Brigham and Denny, secretary and prosecuting-agent of the Society, left to accept other positions; and the Hon. Frank B. Fay of Chelsea, after an interview and correspondence, consented to take the position of secretary, and to relieve me from labor and anxiety, which was telling pretty severely upon my health.

I had decided, under advice of my physician, that rest and travel on the other side of the ocean would be judicious; and I hoped, also, to accomplish some good. So I threw every thing onto Mr. Fay; and, as in my college days it was thought wiser to study dead rather than living languages, I went at once into a French family, to devote my evenings, for six weeks before starting, to studying and talking the French language. The result was, that the words and sentences which I did learn, I pronounced so correctly, that I had the greatest difficulty in making Frenchmen believe that I couldn't understand a word they said to me when they talked rapidly.

On April 17, 1869, I sailed from New York, on the "City of Brooklyn," of the Inman Line, for England.

FIRST DRINKING-FOUNTAINS.

One thing more I will here add. In my address at the first annual meeting of our Society, in Music Hall, just before I started for Europe, I referred, among other things, to twenty drinking-fountains

for animals. It was a curious circumstance, that at the starting of our Society there was not, to my knowledge, in the whole city of Boston a single public fountain, or watering-trough, where a thirsty horse could find water; nor, with one exception, was there in the whole city, *outside the Common*, a single public place where a thirsty *man* could get water. So one of the first things I attempted was to get fountains for animals.

At that time some thousands of temperance-men had petitioned the city government, and used their best endeavors, to get water in the streets *for men*, but had totally failed; yet I soon secured twenty iron fountains *for animals*.

I attributed my success to two facts: *First*, an influential gentleman, who wanted to introduce a new and really good street-pavement, offered to go for my fountains if I would go for his pavement; and, *second*, as horses wouldn't buy beer, there was no objection to giving *them* water. Having obtained water for *horses*, it soon followed for humans.

I should properly say, that the large stone troughs, now seen in our streets, were put in subsequently; several of them being presented to the city by Mr. and Mrs. William Appleton.

EUROPE.

Sailing on April 17, 1869, as before stated, I landed at Queens-town, Ireland, on the 26th; and passing through Ireland, — Cork, Killarney, Dublin, Belfast, Giants' Causeway; thence through Scotland, — Glasgow, Scotch lakes, Edinburgh; thence through the English lake country, Liverpool, Wales, Chester, Manchester, Rugby, Leamington, Oxford, — reached London May 25.

My European travels will be found pretty fully described in the series of twenty letters written by me from various points, and published in "Our Dumb Animals," from June, 1869, to August, 1870, inclusive.

JOHN COLAM, T. B. SMITHIES, AND THE ROYAL SOCIETY.

On Monday, May 31, I called on John Colam, Esq., the able secretary and working head of the Royal Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals.

I thought, and told him so, that in some respects we had accomplished more in Massachusetts, in our first year, than the Royal Society had in about fifty, *because we believed, through and through, in the power of humane education, and in spending our money instead*

of hoarding it. Three days after, on June 3, I called on T. B. Smithies, Esq., a distinguished publisher of London, one of the directors of the Royal Society, and the son of Mrs. Catharine Smithies, who a few years later founded the first English "Band of Mercy." Mr. Smithies and Mr. Colam both sympathized with my views on humane education, and on the importance of starting in London a paper like "Our Dumb Animals," which should be the organ of the Royal Society, through which it could speak to Parliament, magistrates, its friends, and the great public.

FIRST MEETING WITH DIRECTORS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY.

Through the influence of these gentlemen I was invited to address a meeting of the directors of the Royal Society on Monday, June 14, and give them a history of our work and plans in America. The meeting occupied about three hours; the Lord Bishop of Gloucester and Bristol in the chair, and a fine-looking body of elderly gentlemen around the great table, which would, I should think, accommodate some forty or more persons. I spoke about an hour, urging two things, — first, to establish a paper like ours; and, second, to spend their money widely in humane education. When I began, they seemed to me a dignified, cool, and somewhat non-committal body; when I closed, as genial a set of gentlemen as I could wish to meet. But one thing at the close struck me as very strange, and that was the question, *Who should move the vote of thanks?* which seemed to be regarded a much more important matter than we consider it in America; but presently Field-marshal Sir John Burgoyne, an aged gentleman, very near the head of the British army, slowly arose, and with the utmost dignity moved the vote of thanks.

THE BARONESS BURDETT-COUTTS.

At the close of my address, I was introduced to the secretary of Miss (afterwards Baroness) Burdett-Coutts, who brought a written invitation from her ladyship to dine with her and a party of friends the next day at six o'clock, at her splendid country-mansion just out of London. I had suffered a good deal in crossing the ocean, was in very delicate health, could sleep but very little nights, and was so weak that I was often dizzy when walking the streets. I considered the invitation a moment, and then told her secretary that I must decline the invitation to dine, but would, with her kind permission, drive out to her house at five o'clock, one hour before, and in that hour

put before her my plans, which were to form a "*Ladies' Humane Education Society*," of which she should be president; which should enlist the best and foremost women of Great Britain, and through her and their influence lead perhaps to the forming of similar societies among the influential women of other nations; *the object being to carry humane education for the protection of man and beast into the schools of all countries*, also to prevent wars when possible, and, when not possible, then to introduce such humane regulations as should make the condition of the sick, wounded, and prisoners more tolerable.

I think I never saw any one who seemed more astonished than the gentlemanly secretary when I declined her ladyship's invitation to dine. It was probably the first instance of the kind within his experience. But the fact was, that my health and head were in such condition, that I probably could not have sat through a formal dinner. The secretary asked me to put in writing what I had said to him, which I did. Next day, June 15, I took a simple lunch, and then a cab to Holly Lodge, Highgate, her residence, where I arrived at five o'clock, and, ordering the cabman to stop, rang the bell. I was ushered into the mansion, and most kindly received. But her ladyship at once said to me that she had invited a party to meet me, and I must remain, after which she would send me to my lodgings.

I remained from five to about eleven P.M. I was invited to look over the beautiful grounds, but was compelled to decline as I did not feel able. I was then invited to see a fine collection of relics from Pompeii; but I did not feel well enough to look at these but a few moments, and then sat down. I was urged to take a seat at the dining-table, but was not equal to that. After dinner the party gathered around, and I had opportunity to tell my mission. It was an evening I shall never forget, nor some of the questions that were asked me by various persons. "*Shall you see the Empress Eugénie in Paris about this?*" — "*Certainly, if Providence opens the way. I did not expect to be here to-night. I shall be glad to talk with the Empress if Providence opens the way.*" — "*Is your American paper to be put on sale in England?*" — "*No, sir, it is to be given away. I want a similar one established here.*" — "*Don't you want money to help carry on the work in America?*" — "*No, sir: I came to England to spend money, not to get it.*" And so on, question after question; until at last I said in substance this: "*Ladies and gentlemen, I am not well, and my only object in coming here to-night is this: I understand that Miss Burdett-Coutts [this was before she was Baroness] is perhaps the wealthiest woman in England, and one of the*

best. I think it in her power to accomplish more good than any woman has ever accomplished in all history, by entering *upon this grand movement to carry humane education into the schools of all nations*. I think she can enlist the best women of Great Britain, and then perhaps at the courts of France, Italy, Germany, Holland, and possibly other countries, to form similar organizations, and so bring an immense power to bear, not only in preventing cruelty to God's lower creatures, but also to even prevent or mitigate the severity of wars." Thus the evening passed away. I gave the Baroness a file of "Our Dumb Animals," and some books I had obtained in London; and at about eleven o'clock stood in the doorway, not knowing what impression I had made, to bid her good-by. "You will come and see me again, Mr. Angell, when you return from the Continent, will you not?" said Miss Coutts, as she took my hand. I thought a moment, and then said, "If any thing is to be done about this business, and I can help you, I will come with pleasure; but, if nothing is to be done about it, I don't know why I should ever call again."

I did not understand Miss Coutts to promise any thing. My present impression is, that she did not personally ask me any questions, only listened to what others said to me, and I to them: but she either did promise, or determined to and thought she did; for a few weeks later she wrote "The London Times," that she had promised an American gentleman, Mr. Angell, that she would do all she could to *promote humane education*, and would redeem that promise by calling upon all teachers, the Council of Education, and the National Society's Board of Education, to introduce humane teachings into the schools. This letter coming from a lady, who, next to the Queen, was probably more highly respected than any other in Great Britain, was widely republished, and of course attracted great attention. It first appeared in "The London Times" of Sept. 14, 1869.

PARIS.

The inquiry, whether I should see Eugénie in Paris, led me to think that I would like to have an interview with her and the Emperor for two purposes, — first, to put before her the same plans I had put before Miss Coutts; and second this: The Emperor had publicly declared, "*The Empire means peace*;" and it seemed to me, that if he could be induced to propose to the leading powers of Europe to disarm a certain equal percentage of their respective standing armies, say ten per cent to begin with, one of two things must happen: —

Either his proposition would be accepted, and he would have in all

future history the credit of having inaugurated this great movement ; or it would be rejected, in which case he would have the almost equally great honor of having attempted its inauguration.

His Imperial Highness Prince Louis Lucien Bonaparte, cousin to the Emperor, resided at London, and was the first vice-president of the Royal Society, P.C.A. Mr. Colam proposed to obtain for me from him letters of introduction to the Emperor and Empress. But his Imperial Highness was away. Time rolled on. Prince Napoleon of Paris shot and killed Victor Noir the French revolutionist ; and then came thickly those troubles that ended only with the German war, the conquest of France, and the death of the Emperor. Even if I had received the letters of introduction, it was probably too late ; for all Germany, as I afterwards learned, was at that moment one great military camp, ready to march at an hour's notice, even the surgical instruments for each regiment being carefully packed (as I was told by a German medical man), and ready for instant use.

I have mentioned that Prince Napoleon shot and killed Victor Noir the French revolutionist, who called upon him as bearer of a challenge to fight a duel with another French revolutionist. I was in Paris at the time. Some eighty thousand French workmen attended Victor Noir's funeral just outside the city walls, and bore his body on their shoulders to the grave ; then they entered the city, and marched down the broad avenue of the Champs Elysées towards the palace of the Tuileries. It was feared that there would be bloodshed. But just as the great procession came opposite the Palace of Industry, and almost in sight of the Emperor's palace, suddenly a body of *gens d'armes* filed across the street ; immediately behind them wheeled in a battalion of cavalry, and behind them, within quick call, infantry and artillery ; then the drums were beaten three times, which is the French method of reading the riot act ; and immediately the eighty thousand vanished, the streets were empty, and Paris was safe. The Emperor could control Paris, though he could not keep out the German.

THE FRENCH SOCIETY.

I attended in Paris two meetings of the French Society for Protection of Animals. The society occupied a suite of four apartments, if I remember rightly, and had a comfortable hall, seating several hundreds, for its monthly meetings. The first I attended was a monthly meeting of no particular interest. The second was the annual meeting in the large amphitheatre of the Sorbonne, which was crowded to its utmost capacity ; the exercises being music, song,

recitations, addresses, and the distribution of about four hundred medals, — gold, silver, and bronze, — to those of all ages, who during the year had been distinguished for various acts of humanity towards animals.

Two incidents in connection with this meeting I shall always remember.

A fine-looking boy, on his way to school with his little dinner-basket or pail, had found in the street a half-starved dog; and he pitied the dog so much that he gave it all his dinner, and fasted himself. The society heard of it, and awarded him a medal. When the president announced what he had done, and called upon him to come forward to the platform, and the little fellow came up to receive his medal, the whole audience stood up, and cheered him.

The other was this: On the morning of the meeting I fell in with a full-faced, fleshy American doctor of divinity, and invited him to go with me. The hall, aisles, and platform were absolutely packed. The weather was intensely hot. The reverend doctor was in a place on the platform from which egress was impossible without great disturbance. The exercises lasted several hours, and he did not understand a word of French. Happening to turn around, I saw his face covered with perspiration, and the picture of despair. The thought came, and I leaned over and said, "*Doctor, do you believe in purgatory?*" A smile came over his face as he replied, "*I begin to.*" I have never met him since, to ask his opinion of societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals.

While in Paris I was invited by a gentleman connected with the French Society, to dine at his house on horse-meat; the use of which is very common there, and saves many old horses past service from cruelty. If I had not known, I should have supposed it some kind of wild game, and the taste not at all disagreeable.

SWITZERLAND.

From Paris I went direct to Geneva, Switzerland, making a considerable stop in that beautiful city, and four days for rest at a château perched on a cliff of Mont Salève overhanging the valley of Geneva, and built upon the ruins of an old castle, once the residence of the Dukes of Savoy. The city, the lake, the rivers Arve and Rhone, and men and horses crawling like flies along the roads far beneath me; occasionally, the sound of distant church-bells, — these were the sights and sounds, as I sat at my window, from which I could toss a stone hundreds of feet down the steep side of the mountain.

From thence to the foot of Mont Blanc at Chamouni, where I spent some days; thence over the Tête Noir Pass to Martigny, the valley of the Rhone, Villeneuve, the Castle of Chillon, Vevay, Lausanne, Evian-les-Bains, Freiburg, Berne, Thun, Interlachen, Lauterbrunnen, Falls of the Giesbach, Brunig Pass and Lakes, to Lucerne; and thence to the World's International Congress of our societies at Zurich, on the 3d, 4th, 5th, and 6th of August.

THE CONGRESS AT ZURICH.

Here I found myself the only delegate from America, England being represented by Mr. and Mrs. Colam and two others. The city hall of the city was placed at our disposal, and our mornings devoted to discussions, by the use of interpreters, in the various languages of our respective nations. Little did Mr. Colam or I then think, that good Mrs. Colam would so soon after pass into the unknown world; and that the interesting and highly educated young German lady, daughter of the burgomaster of New Brandenburg near Berlin, who kindly translated to us all that was said, would in a few short years become Mrs. Colam. But so it has happened.

Monday evening we had a public reception. Tuesday afternoon and evening, a steamboat-excursion on the lake, with music and flags of the nations; supper on a beautiful island in sight of the snow-clad Alps, and, on our return in the evening, fireworks and a partial illumination of the city.

Wednesday afternoon, a reception at a gentleman's château just outside the city, and a garden-concert and fireworks in the evening; and Thursday afternoon and evening, an elegant dinner, in a hall beautifully decorated with flags of the various nations, and a band playing the various national melodies. We were taken to the hall in the private carriages of wealthy citizens.

It was my aim, as those will notice who have read my ninth letter in October, 1869, "Our Dumb Animals," to bring forcibly before that Congress the importance of humane education. *The closing words of my written and afterwards printed report to the Congress, which will be found in November, 1869, "Our Dumb Animals," were: "Our society is now striving [after naming other things] to unite all religious and political parties on one platform, for the purpose of carrying a humane literature and education into all the schools of the country, and thus not only insure the protection of animals, but also the prevention of crime, unnecessary wars, and forms of violence. When the leading minds of all nations shall act together on this subject,*

and the nations shall be humanely educated, wars between nations will end."

From this Congress, with Mr. Colam and his excellent wife I went through Constance, Lake Constance, Ragatz, Pfeffersbad, Via Mala, by the Splügen Pass across the Alps to Italy; thence through Lake Como to Milan; thence by Lake Maggiore, the Simplon, Furca, and most beautiful part of the St. Gothard passes, to Lucerne, where, after a few days' stop, Mr. and Mrs. Colam returned direct to London.

NAMING "THE ANIMAL WORLD."

I had almost forgotten to say, that, the Royal Society having determined to publish a monthly, on the first night after leaving the Congress, while walking in the grounds of the Hotel Schweizerhof, overlooking the beautiful falls of the Rhine, Mr. Colam asked me to suggest a name. I suggested "*Animal Creation*." Mr. Colam suggested "*World*." We both agreed that "*World*" was better, and that it should be called "*The Animal World*;" under which name it is now known, and read with interest wherever our humane cause has extended.

DOWN THE RHINE.

After two months in Alpine and trans-Alpine Switzerland, I started, Sept. 1, down the Rhine, stopping in Strasbourg, Baden-Baden, Heidelberg, Frankfort-on-the-Main, Hamburg, Wiesbaden, Mayence, Coblenz, Ems, Bonn, Cologne, Düsseldorf; thence through Holland, stopping at Utrecht, Amsterdam, The Hague, Rotterdam; thence through Belgium, stopping at Antwerp and Brussels; and so back to Paris, which I reached Sept. 29. My letters in November and December, 1869, "*Our Dumb Animals*," give a pretty full description of this trip. At Heidelberg, at a large out-door festival, I was pleased to see numerous pigeons running around without molestation, almost under the feet of the people, picking up the crumbs that fell from the tables.

At Frankfort, I had an amusing incident. I arrived at the hotel late in the evening, and immediately retired. Next morning, when I came down to breakfast, I found my bill on my plate (morning bills being the custom of the house, as I afterwards learned); and on it was charged forty-eight kreutzers (equivalent, as our currency then was, to about forty-eight cents of our money) *for candles*, of which I only had one small one. After breakfast, I went to the clerk's desk to pay, and asked if that was the customary charge. He replied, quite stiffly, that it was. I said, "I am very glad to learn it." He

looked surprised, having probably never heard a similar remark on a similar occasion; so I added, "Because I am writing letters for publication in the United States; and it will be quite an item for me, that at the Hotel de Russie, at Frankfort-on-the-Main, I paid forty-eight kreutzers for half an inch of one small candle." He took the bill, and reduced it in a moment to twenty-four kreutzers, which I thought quite enough. I concluded to spend the winter in Paris, and, if possible, improve my health, which much needed improving.

THE FIRST "ANIMAL WORLD."

Four days after, on Oct. 3, 1869, I received from Mr. Colam copies of the first number of "The Animal World," containing the letter of Miss Coutts before referred to, and another from the Lord Bishop of Gloucester and Bristol, in which he most kindly mentioned myself, and my hearing before the Royal Society. It was a beautiful paper, splendidly illustrated, and made the day of its reception a memorable one to me.

A very singular incident happened just here, which I shall never forget. Just as I was opening the paper, a little bird flew to my open chamber-window, and sang its song. With a single exception, it was the only instance, during a four-months' residence in Paris, that a bird, to my knowledge, came to my chamber-window. The other was almost as singular, and happened three days later.

Oct. 6, when I took lodgings at No. 3 Avenue d'Elyau, overlooking the Arc de Triomphe, a white dove or pigeon flew in at my open window, and walked about the room, looking at me. I spoke kindly, and offered refreshments; but presently my visitor hopped to the window, and took his or her departure. The family with whom I stopped thought it very singular.

VERSAILLES.

I will tell one other French incident that pleased me. I went out to Versailles, one day, to see the great picture-galleries. After walking through them until very tired, I went outside the palace-grounds, into a little restaurant, and ordered dinner. I was given a small, square table, with seats for four. Presently a large, fine-looking dog came to the side at my right; another to the side fronting me; and then one of those handsome French cats seated herself in the chair at my left. So the table was full; and, as they accepted my hospitality, we four dined pleasantly together.

ITALY, BAVARIA, AUSTRIA, AND PRUSSIA.

In January, 1870, finding my health very much improved, I decided to again travel, and started with a party, on Jan. 24, on another and longer tour through Southern France, Italy, Bavaria, Austria, and Prussia, back to Paris, making stops in Lyons, Marseilles, and Nice; from whence I went by carriage over the beautiful Corniché road, winding along the shore of the Mediterranean on the right, with the snow-capped Alps and Apennines on the left; now across valleys and ravines; and again through the queerest of old Italian towns, with the highest of houses and narrowest of streets, through which only one vehicle could pass at a time. And so we travelled several days; stopping at Mentone, San Remo, Alassio, and Savona, where we took rail for Genoa. In Italy, we stopped at Genoa, Turin, Bologna, Florence, Pisa, Rome, Naples, Venice, Verona; then, crossing the Alps by the Brenner Pass, we stopped in the Tyrol, at Bozen and Innsbruck; thence to München; thence to Linz, and down the beautiful blue Danube to Vienna; thence to Prague, Dresden, Berlin, Cologne, and Paris, which we reached April 30. (For particulars, see letters fifteen to eighteen inclusive, published in "Our Dumb Animals" of April, May, June, and July, 1870.)

In travelling down the French and Italian coast, as before stated, I was much pleased to find, at the foot of long, steep hills, men with extra horses, which, for a small compensation, they would hitch on, and help us up the hills.

In Florence, where we made quite a stop, I endeavored to start a society for the prevention of cruelty to animals, but could not stop long enough. One has since been founded there.

HIRAM POWERS.

I had there one memorable conversation with the distinguished American sculptor Hiram Powers, in which he expressed his firm conviction that the great need of our country was *more education of the heart*.

"*Educate the hearts of the people,*" said he, "*and the heads will take care of themselves. . . . Give in your schools rewards to the good boys, not to the smart ones. . . . God gives the intellect: the boy should not be rewarded for that. . . . The great danger of our country is from its smart men. . . . Educate the heart,—educate the heart. Let us have GOOD men.*" These were the words of that old man eloquent, with an eye like an eagle's, and a face full of sunshine. The way I first met him was amusing. As our party

entered his studio, no one being in sight, the first object that attracted my attention was the bust of a fine-looking, middle-aged lady of kindly, benevolent face. I had become pretty much surfeited with saints and martyrs and such like, and here was something that was absolutely refreshing; so I burst out with about these words, "*Well, thank God! we have found at last the bust of a good Christian woman of the nineteenth century.*" It was the bust of Mrs. Powers; and Mr. Powers, though unseen, heard every word I said. I could not have had a better introduction.

KEEPING WARM.

Bologna, as many people know, is, with its ancient university, a very famous old city; but the principal occupation I found there was to keep warm. On the night of my arrival, Feb. 13, it seemed impossible to heat my room, with its enormous chimney and fireplace, in the quaint old hotel, which perhaps, like the hotel I stopped at in Genoa, was built before the discovery of America. At last it became a vital question, on which I threw aside all delicacy, and, summoning the landlord, told him, in words then common in America, that, "*if it took the last chicken in the Confederacy,*" I must be kept warm that night. I think that I paid, next morning, about three dollars for the fuel that went up that old chimney during the night.

VENICE.

At Venice, I was struck with certain things: *First*, the kindness shown to the pigeons, which were fed every day in the great square of San Marco, and no one permitted to injure them. *Second*, the admirable abattoir, where animals used in the city for food were kept in most excellent condition, — fed and watered twice a day up to the time of killing; calves never bled, and, like cattle, always stunned before they were killed; every animal examined by veterinary surgeons before killing, and its meat immediately afterwards, and all found diseased condemned, and used only for manure. And, *third*, that in that city there was probably less cruelty to horses than in any other in the world. I suppose I ought to add, however, that there were only seven horses in the city. These belonged to a riding-school, and were not used enough to prevent their being kept in excellent condition.

MUNICH. — BURIALS OF THE DEAD.

At Munich, I came for the first time upon a custom that prevails largely through Germany, in regard to the burial of the dead. Adja-

cent to the cemetery is a large, airy building, with many rooms and glass sides, to which, soon after death is declared, the body of every person, rich or poor, *must* be carried. There, neatly attired and usually adorned with flowers, in plain sight of all passers, it must remain three days, with its hand fastened to a wire connecting with a bell, which the slightest motion will ring. At the end of three days, the burial takes place. Remembering that my own father once barely escaped being buried alive, and that all bodies are here subjected to competent and most careful inspection, I could well understand the wisdom of this law. I think there is reason to fear that thousands of people have been buried alive in America, and hope the time may come when stringent laws in regard to burials will be enacted here.

VIENNA.

At Vienna, I found a picture which amused me more than any other I saw in Europe. It was a pursued foraging party that had seized a donkey, loaded him with chickens and other plunder, and were trying to get him across some planks over a ravine before the galloping pursuers in sight could overtake them. Some were pulling and some pushing, their faces full of anxiety; while the donkey, with ears down and back up, was just doing his level best for his country, to save himself and the chickens.

BERLIN.

At Berlin, at a restaurant, I saw the largest dog in that city, a grand specimen of the St. Bernard, almost as large, and I doubt not quite as brave, as a lion; and good as he was great, for, without hope of reward, he walked up to me, wagging his tremendous tail, and lapped my face with his huge tongue.

I should also add, that at Berlin I found one of the most interesting objects I had met with in all Europe, — an aquarium, fitted with great taste, to represent underground grottoes; immense glass tanks of running water all around and above you, through which the light comes, and in which were rocks, plants, and shells, gigantic frogs, lobsters, and crawling things; and fish, great and little, some weighing, perhaps, fifteen or twenty pounds, swimming up within an inch of your nose. It required little effort to imagine one's self near the bottom of the ocean; and to me, such a look into the homes and habits of the dwellers of the sea was of more interest than many art-galleries I had seen.

GOOD-BY TO PARIS.

The time was now approaching when I must leave Paris, and set my face homewards. I was not tired of it: I could have staid a year, or years, longer, and not have been tired of it. It is a fascinating city. But my health was improved, the great objects of my journey accomplished, and there was plenty of work for me in my own country. I had visited various times the splendid abattoir, had noted the fine condition of 'bus and draught-horses (I never saw but one case of overloading in Paris, and in that the driver, after speaking kindly to his horses, went immediately for another horse), had familiarized myself with the public buildings and parks and great collections of art, and admired the excellent police and sanitary regulations.

Some things I wished could have been otherwise. I would have liked to have all those great battle-pictures, which commemorate the victories of France over other nations placed in private galleries, or, still better, destroyed; for I thought they tended to war. I would have liked to have the Arch of Triumph (built to commemorate victories over Germany) stripped of its bloody adornments, and named the "Arch of Peace." I would have liked to have a great house of refuge, or home for the homeless, where, at any hour of the day or night, any poor wanderer upon the streets, contemplating suicide, could ring the bell, and find a plain but clean bed, and plain but wholesome food, and friendly advice. Paris was, in my judgment, by no means perfect; but the condition of the poorer classes in that city was better than in most others, and life more desirable.

June 8 I crossed the Channel by way of Boulogne and Folkstone, arriving in London at 9.30 P.M. I brought with me a gold medal valued at about forty dollars, awarded by the French Society to my friend John Colam, for his heroism in stopping, at great personal risk, a bull-fight in London. It was a pleasant thing to bring.

JOHN COLAM.

During one month, from June 9, I was a guest at Mr. Colam's home, just out of London; my window commanding ten miles of beautiful English landscape, rich with the verdure of an English summer. Daily, morning and evening, we journeyed in and out together, discussing our plans, and watching the tides of humanity which ever ebb and flow through the arteries of that great city.

THE LADIES' HUMANE EDUCATIONAL COMMITTEE.

"The Animal World" was established, but the "Ladies' Humane Educational Committee" still hung fire. Through the earnest assistance of Mr. Colam and Mr. Smithies, who were with me heart and soul, I again addressed the directors of the Royal Society, and with their delegation, including Messrs. Colam and Smithies, again visited Miss Burdett-Coutts, passing several hours at her mansion. Then came that memorable interview with Lord Harrowby, then seventy-two years of age, when he said to me, that, the fashionable season being about over, it was too late to establish the committee that season. A thought struck me; and I replied, "*Your lordship is now alive; Miss Burdett-Coutts is now alive. Next year at this time we may all be dead and buried.*" He thought a moment, and then said, "The committee shall be formed now." And it was formed a few days after; and under the presidency of Miss (now the Baroness) Burdett-Coutts, has been doing its great work for humanity ever since, sending its appeal to seventy-five thousand teachers, and causing about six hundred prizes to be annually distributed to pupils in English schools who write the best compositions on kindness to animals.

PRIZES IN SCHOOLS.

In my letter of May 17, 1869, to "Our Dumb Animals," written from Edinburgh, on my way to London, and published in July, 1869, "Our Dumb Animals," *I expressed the wish that we might offer prizes in the schools for the best compositions on kindness to animals.*

The Royal Society, at its next annual meeting, May 28, 1870, adopted this plan by giving about a hundred prizes to pupils in London schools; and that was, so far as I am aware, the first instance in the world in which a prize was ever given, in any school, for a composition on kindness to animals. The Royal Society has since given about six hundred such prizes annually.

HOME.

On July 9, 1870, I sailed from Liverpool, on the Cunard side-wheel steamer "Scotia," and arrived in New York July 19, to learn, that, while we were on the ocean, war had broken out between France and Germany, and the great struggle had commenced which ended with the capture of Paris.

One incident happened on the voyage which amused us. A somewhat queer specimen from the Pacific coast, whom we called "Cal-

fornia," made no use of his state-room, but camped day and night on a lounge in the gentlemen's small cabin. A very athletic and robust gentleman from Boston was in the habit of having a hogshhead of cold ocean-water pumped up every morning near the stern of the vessel, for his personal use, and then, as soon as he got up, plunging in. He often told us, in the little cabin, the good effects of this practice. One cool morning, to his astonishment, he found "California," who had been a quiet listener, ahead of him, and up to his neck in his hogshhead of water. The result was, that during the remainder of the voyage "California" could not straighten his back, and was compelled to walk in a position strongly suggestive of the initial letter of the State from which he came.

LAST LETTER FROM ENGLAND.

On June 23 I wrote my last letter from London: and in it I answered the question, *What do you think of travel in Europe?* It was pretty widely republished from "Our Dumb Animals," in Boston papers; and, as it contains certain conclusions derived from fifteen months' travel and residence abroad, I close with it my European experiences.

LONDON, June 23, 1870.

This is my last letter before starting for home; and I propose in it to answer in advance a question that will be often asked, —

WHAT DO YOU THINK OF TRAVEL IN EUROPE?

I think that as an *educational process*, to those who have health and leisure, it is desirable. Those who suppose our systems in all respects perfect may find we have much to learn; and those who suppose we can conquer the world may conclude that we had better try *first* to conquer ourselves, and build up at home a united, honest, and humane nation.

To those, on the other hand, who, forgetting the greatness of their own age and country, reverence too much things distant and things of the past, it may be useful to dissipate their romantic fancies.

CHOATE AND WEBSTER.

I remember how once Mr. Choate had been arguing a good share of a day to convince a jury that two car-wheels, standing before them in court, and looking precisely similar, were in fact different; when Mr. Webster, in reply, demolished the whole by saying, "*Gentlemen of the jury, there they are! Look at them!*"

And so with travel here. We have been reading, all our lives, European history, romance, and poetry, — Shakspeare, Ivanhoe, and the Lady of the Lake; of Kenilworth and Warwick Castles, St. Paul's, the Tower, and Westminster Abbey; of picture-galleries and art-collections; of Swiss mountains and lakes, and German forests and rivers; of Cologne, Frankfort, and Bingen on the Rhine; of cathedrals and palaces, and the old cities of Italy, — until they have assumed,

in our imaginations, strange, hazy, gigantic, and unreal forms; and when we get here the delusion vanishes.

Aside from their historical associations, we find cathedrals only large, richly ornamented churches; castles and monasteries, very uncomfortable residences; many palaces not very unlike our best American hotels, with somewhat larger halls and rooms for receptions and museums: no forests, lakes, or rivers that compare with ours in size, and very few that compare with them in beauty; the mountains of Switzerland only higher than those of our Eastern States, which are quite high enough; the skies of Italy no better than ours, and the skies of England worse.

IS IT A PLACE FOR INVALIDS?

But to the invalid contemplating European travel, certain other facts are worthy of consideration.

He will find, in spring, cold east winds all over Great Britain and Northern Europe, just such as blow across Massachusetts Bay, with none of the heating arrangements devised for our protection. He will find, often, large rooms, with small fireplaces and great flues. In his chamber, neither hot nor cold water-pipes, candles instead of gas, sometimes damp sheets and uncomfortable beds.

In winter, cold railway-cars, each like an omnibus set sideways, half the passengers compelled to ride backwards; no ventilation except at the ends, and those sometimes occupied by smokers; no dining or sleeping cars, or gentlemen's or ladies' saloons, so far as I have seen, in any car, and the stops at way-stations short. Fast trains expensive, cheap trains slow, and the best trains in the night. Custom-house examinations, and uncomfortable old diligences; irregularity of meals and sleep; dinners from one to two hours long, with a multitude of courses he does not want, but must sit through for others he does. Over a large part of the Continent, bad water; and in some of its towns and cities, beggars, fleas, and malaria.

He will find many Continental cities and towns noisy at night with bells, shoutings, and cracking of whips. If he retires early, perhaps doors on each side of his room, an uncarpeted floor overhead, and his neighbors stirring until one or two o'clock in the morning. Few of the sociable parlors found at home. If sick, a physician who knows nothing of him, of whom he knows nothing, and with whom, perhaps, he can only communicate through an interpreter; languages he cannot understand; incomprehensible currencies, and little cheatings and swindlings without number.

Add to all these, absence from friends and home, and the certain discomfort, in nine cases out of ten, of two voyages across the Atlantic, and it would certainly seem that the invalid should well consider before undertaking a tour of Europe.

HOME.

And after all, for the comfort of those who prefer staying at home, — speaking from more than a year's experience, — I should say, that I have seen hardly a finer building in Europe than our National Capitol; or a more beautiful work of art than Crawford's equestrian statue of Washington, at Richmond; or a more charming view than from the top of Mount Holyoke; or a finer stage-ride than over the Hoosac Mountain, from North Adams to Greenfield; or a better hall than our Music Hall; or more commodious places of public amusement than ours; or a greater variety of beautiful scenery than within ten miles of Boston. If you love Nature in her grandest or most beautiful forms, you need cross no

ocean to see them; and as for art, — which is only the imitation of nature, — you may go through the dead galleries of Europe in vain for the pleasure of one laughing child, or happy animal, or grand old forest-tree.

At home, under one language, currency; and law, you have a country reaching across a continent, and including almost every variety of climate and production; a country full of villages, churches, and schools, in whose homes are books and newspapers, and over which you may travel thousands of miles without meeting a beggar. I have seen it from New England, and the high table-lands of Minnesota, to the orange-groves of Florida; and I declare, that for variety of magnificent scenery, and facilities of inter-communication, I believe there is not its equal in the world. G. T. A.

ONE THING MORE.

And yet I should add one thing more, while speaking thus highly of my own country; viz., that I saw many things, both in Great Britain and on the Continent, as those who read my European letters, before referred to, will find, which in my judgment we might profitably copy.

I was told, before starting, that I should meet many very “disagreeable English people.” I can say, that from the time I first set foot in England, up to that long and too friendly article of Mr. Colam’s, in “The Animal World,” of June, 1872, — in which he undertook to tell the good work he thought I had accomplished, — I received an almost unbroken series of kindnesses from English people.

FIRST BAND OF MERCY IN THE WORLD.

In December, 1875, five years after my return, when that good woman, Catharine Smithies, who had enlisted in our humane work many years before I saw England, had, by her own personal exertions, caused to be established the first “*Band of Mercy*” in England and the world, she endeavored to share with me even that great honor, by writing me, Dec., 20, 1875, in a letter which I preserve as one of my choicest treasures: —

“I do not forget that you it was that was the means in God’s hand of beginning the Ladies’ Society, one fruit of which is the present one.”

To which I answer, that I do not forget that it was Mrs. Smithies and her excellent son, who were the means, in God’s hand, of bringing about that interview at the house of Miss Coutts which enabled me to lay before her the plans I had already laid before them, and which resulted in the Ladies’ Society or committee, to which she refers.

My last impressions of England can be no better expressed than in the words I wrote from London, June 7, 1869, soon after my first

arrival, and which were published in July, 1869, "Our Dumb Animals," as follows:—

IMPRESSIONS OF ENGLAND.

For the past few weeks I have been mingling constantly with the men, women, and children of the great middling classes, who compose the body of England and Scotland. I have found them orderly, law-abiding, ready to do kindness, expressing kind feelings towards our country, good fathers, mothers, brothers, sisters, husbands, and wives. I have found great respect for public worship, and all good things, — the streets of cities on Lord's Day almost as quiet as a country village; in their houses, happy, healthy, ruddy faces, flowers, pictures, and birds; at the great Derby races the other day, with half a million of people present, less rowdyism than I have seen at home at some country musters. American as I am, and proud as I am of my country, I doubt much whether our average of honesty, morality, and religion, reverence for God, and love for man, is higher than that of the middling classes in England and Scotland. I need not speculate upon the probabilities, pecuniarily, of a conflict between this people and ourselves, whether we should be stronger or England weaker for the loss of Canada or Ireland. I need not count her tremendous navy, and almost innumerable mercantile marine, easily armed. I need not picture the cost and devastation each might inflict; but I ask in the name of humanity whether it is necessary that two great Christian nations, praying every night and morning to the same God, and looking forward to a common inheritance in the same heaven, shall be plunged, now or at any future period, into a fratricidal war? For the sake of humanity and civilization, our common objects here, and our common hope hereafter, God forbid! I know nothing of that statesmanship which seeks to aggrandize one nation at the expense of another: I see no reason why three impartial men cannot settle questions between nations, as well as individuals. But if all other means were to fail, I for one would say, Let us pay all losses ourselves, send a receipted bill to England, and hand down to posterity the noblest example a nation ever set. We are strong and rich. The world knows it. We can afford to be generous.

G. T. A.

CHICAGO.

The Hon. John C. Dore of Chicago, who had been president of its Board of Trade, also of its Board of Education, and was then one of two senators representing his city and county in the Legislature of Illinois, had been from college days my personal friend. He had from my first movements in Boston taken great interest in the prevention of cruelty to animals, and had obtained the enactment in Illinois of a most stringent code of laws for their protection. A few weeks after my return from England, he was in Boston, and urged me to visit Chicago, which was then, if not the most cruel city, certainly one of the most cruel cities, of the world. I thought it a duty to comply with his request; and on Oct. 1, 1870, arrived in that city, making my home at his house, and soon after began my investigations. Old horses were abandoned in cold weather, and turned out on the prairie

to starve. Just about the time I came there, two horses died of starvation; and the man who caused it went unpunished. A cow run over by an engine in the south part of the city, and both her fore-feet cut off, was permitted to lie in a public street twenty-four hours with nobody to care for her; rough men and boys looking at her, some laughing at her, and some poking her with sticks.

That was Chicago in 1870. Men were too busy trying to make money to think of any thing else. It would require pages to tell the various forms and cases of cruelty I discovered in that city. Then with an old hat and coat I went to the stock-yards, and sat on the fences, and walked about, and watched the piles of dead and dying taken off the cars, sometimes a thousand or more in a single day; the manner of loading with spike-poles and pitch-forks, sometimes thirty or more holes made through the hide of a single animal, and that, too, when the animal was trying to do its best. I said to one man, I should think there was danger of putting out their eyes. He said they didn't care if they did. The water was shut off from those stock-yards every Saturday night till Monday morning. During the long, intensely hot Sundays of summer, while church-bells were ringing, and the people of Chicago were gathering in the churches to pray for God's mercy, tens of thousands of animals were standing in those stock-yards, within sight of those church-spires, and within sound of those sabbath bells, from Saturday night until Monday morning, without one drop of water. In company with Mr. Dore, I called upon, and was introduced to, the editors of the various Chicago dailies, — the "Tribune," "Times," "Post," "Journal," and "Staats-Zeitung," — laid before them my plans, and obtained their unanimous agreement to sustain me in attempting to form a humane society in Illinois.

ILLINIOS HUMANE SOCIETY.

On Nov. 8 I engaged the back office of the Connecticut Mutual Life Insurance Company, 154 Washington Street; and on Nov. 10, in all the daily papers of Chicago appeared an article of about two columns, written by me, giving an account of the progress of this work in other cities and States, and the great need of it in Chicago and Illinois. This article was signed by Mr. Dore and eight other prominent citizens. From this time to March 9, when I started for Boston, I was constantly engaged, assisted by Mr. Dore and other citizens, in the founding and establishing of the "Illinois Humane Society," receiving also great aid from the press.

I called upon about a hundred of the most prominent men and

firms, and talked with others without number, distributed a large amount of humane literature, procured at my own expense a seal, engaged a large public hall in which to organize, and hired at my own expense the best organist in the city to help fill it. He wanted forty dollars, but finally consented to take twenty dollars. To attempt to give in detail the experiences of those months in Chicago, resulting in the formation of the "Illinois Humane Society," with Hon. John C. Dore and other prominent men as its directors, and Edwin Lee Brown as its first president, would require a small volume. It cost me a vast deal of hard work, much anxiety, and about six hundred dollars in money. It has resulted in the prevention of immense cruelty in that city, and in a largely increased humane protection of from seven to eight millions of animals that annually pass into and through those great stock-yards. I call it a good investment. I would not sell it for the best ten thousand dollars ever made in that city.

1871.

Returning to Boston, March, 1871, I found our Massachusetts Society had only a few hundred dollars in its treasury, and that funds must be raised, or the officers discharged. I laid plans before the directors, and prepared an appeal to the people of the State, that was widely published. It had been already decided to hold a fair. As the result of the appeal and the fair, which was managed with great ability by our secretary, Hon. Frank B. Fay, assisted by Mrs. William Appleton and others, we received from March 23, 1871, to Aug. 1, 1872, about thirty-eight thousand three hundred and seventy-five dollars.

FIRST CHURCH IN AMERICA.

April, 1871, on invitation of the "Ladies' Society of Philadelphia," Mrs. Caroline E. White, president, I lectured in Mercantile Hall, Philadelphia, and in May repeated the lecture in the Church of the Unity, Boston, which was probably the first church in America, and perhaps the first in the world, in which a lecture on cruelty to animals was ever given by a layman on Lord's Day. In both cities it was very fully and widely reported, quite a number of papers giving all, or most, of the lecture, the subject being new in this country. Subsequently, during the year, I lectured, or gave addresses, in Boston and various Massachusetts cities and towns, and wrote a variety of articles for the press; particularly on the *danger of eating the meats of animals killed or injured in transportation, the danger of*

using lead pipes, and regulations to increase the safety of travel on railroads.

1872.

In February of this year, there was reported to be danger of difficulty with England. The papers stated that the President was in consultation with Gen. Sheridan; fortifications were to be put in order, the manufacture of rifles largely increased, etc. At the same time came this telegram from England: "*Prayers were offered yesterday in all the churches in Sheffield, for the prevention of war between England and the United States.*"

I immediately wrote an article, widely published in Boston papers, on the folly of war with England, and calling upon our American churches to join the prayer of the churches at Sheffield.

In April I wrote letters published in the Boston "Daily Advertiser," suggesting various reforms needed, and urging our wealthy, unemployed young men to organize a "*Reform Club.*" Some time after, I learned that such a club had been formed in Philadelphia.

In this same month I urged through the papers the furnishing of seats for shop-girls, where they could occasionally sit down; the custom in Boston stores being to require them to stand all day.

ESSAY ON CATTLE-TRANSPORTATION.

Early in the year our Society offered a prize of one hundred dollars for the best essay on the transportation of animals. I wrote under the assumed name of "*Litera.*" The committee, Hon. J. C. Converse, chairman of our State board of railroad commissioners, and Ex-Mayor Hon. and Dr. N. B. Shurtleff, awarded the prize to my essay, which I presented to the Society. This essay was widely noticed by the press; and some fifteen to twenty thousand copies were printed and put before Congress, legislatures, and elsewhere. It is still circulated.

THE CHECK-REIN ESSAY.

On May 15 I published an essay on the check-rein, which was republished in newspaper and pamphlet form widely in this country and Europe, being translated into various European languages. I think it has now the widest circulation of any publication of its kind.

MARRIAGE.

Nov. 7 I was married to Eliza A. Martin of Nahant, formerly Eliza A. Mattoon of Northfield, Mass., and thereby secured a good wife and happy home to help in future labors.

In this year occurred the great Boston fire, burning up about one hundred millions of dollars' worth of property. I lost several trunks containing important letters and various articles of much personal value.

1873.

FIRST LAW ON OVERLOADING.

In January my article on overloading was adopted by Bishop in his book on "Statutory Crimes," as sound law, and was, *I think, the first law ever published on what constitutes overloading.*

UNITED-STATES MAILS IN LOCKED WAGONS.

On Feb. 11 I urged, through "The Boston Daily Advertiser," the importance of carrying United-States mails in covered and locked wagons; which have since been adopted. They were then carried in open wagons with little care.

FIVE QUESTIONS ANSWERED.

March 1 my paper entitled "Five Questions Answered" appeared in "The Boston Transcript." This has had a circulation of between one and two hundred thousand in pamphlet form, and has been widely reprinted by papers in this and other countries. During this year, in addition to articles for the press, I gave lectures and addresses in various Massachusetts cities and towns; also in Toronto and Montreal, Canada; also, on invitation of the leading summer residents of Newport, R.I., in the Academy of Music there.

HUMANE METHODS OF KILLING ANIMALS.

In September I obtained the consent of Dr. D. D. Slade, professor of zoölogy at Harvard University, and one of the directors of our society, to prepare a pamphlet on *humane methods of killing animals*; which has had wide circulation, and done much good. *So far as I know, it was the first pamphlet of its kind ever published.*

FIRST TEACHERS' CONVENTION IN AMERICA.

On Dec. 30 I addressed the annual convention of Massachusetts State teachers at Worcester, Mass. I thought it important that Massachusetts teachers should know more than they did about our work; and wrote their president, proposing to address them at my own expense, as was my usual custom. He accepted the proposal,

and cordially invited me to do so. But when I reached Worcester and the convention, I found the matter had been considered, and probably had been decided, like peace and temperance, irrelevant to a teachers' convention. At any rate, the president said that he should be able to give me but little time. I had come at considerable personal inconvenience and expense; had brought a man with me, and a large package of humane literature to be gratuitously distributed. I was kept waiting the entire evening, listening to discussions of little importance; and at last, at about nine o'clock, when the convention had been in session all day, and the teachers were just putting on their hats and shawls to leave, the president announced for the first time, that a gentleman desired to address the convention on "*cruelty to animals.*" The announcement was received with a shout of laughter from one end of the hall to the other. I think I was never more indignant in my life than when I strode on to the platform that evening.

I said that the great teacher Agassiz, whose name towered above all other teachers as Mount Washington among little hills, was a firm believer in *the immortality* of animals. I said that hundreds of thousands of these poor creatures were dying every year on our cattle-cars from want of food and water, and their dead and diseased bodies were sold in our markets for food, and *every person in that audience* was liable on each and every day of the year to eat the dangerous meats of these diseased animals; and then I struck into the great field of humane education, — *the connection between cruelty and crime, and how the remedy was away down in the public schools.* I talked until nearly ten o'clock, and they stopped to hear me. At the close they said that no matter more important had come before their convention. *I agreed with them.* It is quite likely my aim was better accomplished than it would have been with smooth sailing, and an open sea. *My impression is, from my reading and information, that this was probably the first teachers' convention ever addressed on this subject in this country, and perhaps in the world.*

1874.

During this year I gave a lecture, entitled "*The Relations of Animals that can speak, to those that are dumb,*" and addresses, before a large number of influential audiences, — among them the *Legislatures of Connecticut and New Hampshire; the Connecticut State Teachers' Association at New Haven; the New-England Methodist Conference of some three hundred clergymen; the Congregational clergy*

of Boston and vicinity; the Essex-county, Mass., Unitarian clergy; a meeting of Boston clergy at Mrs. Appleton's; the great camp-meeting at Martha's Vineyard; the New-Hampshire State Normal School; the Young Men's Christian Union; various churches on Sundays, and others.

FIRST LECTURES AND ADDRESSES IN AMERICA.

In 1847 Dr. John C. Warren of Boston, father of Mrs. William Appleton, gave an address before the Massachusetts Legislative Agricultural Society, in which he denounced cruelty to the horse. And, prior to any of mine, Mr. Bergh gave an address before the Agricultural Society of Putnam County, Conn., and possibly elsewhere. But, so far as I know, my lectures and addresses *on the general subject of cruelty to animals have been the first ever given in this country, and perhaps in the world, before legislatures, universities, colleges, city, county, state, and national conventions of clergy, normal schools, high schools, Sunday-school conventions, churches on Lord's Days, camp-meetings, national, state, and local granges, penitentiary and house-of-correction convicts, and some other audiences.*

Of course I encountered many obstacles and hardships; but, on the other hand, I had many pleasant experiences. At the close of my address to the New-England Methodist Conference, a clergyman rose, and moved a unanimous vote of thanks. "*Make it a standing vote, brother,*" said another voice, and up went the whole great audience.

The Sunday preceding my address to the State Normal School of New Hampshire, the clergyman read in church a notice of my address, to which was added, "There will be no collection. Mr. Angell speaks upon this subject because he likes to, pays his own expenses, and only asks his audiences to listen." "*God bless him!*" said the clergyman. I shall never forget that "*God bless him!*"

During this year I collected and prepared a large number of humane selections for a series of school-readers; also appeared before the Joint Committee on Agriculture, at the State House, to advocate a reform in transportation and slaughtering.

PROTECTION OF ANIMALS.

But perhaps the most important work of the year was the very careful preparation of the paper, entitled "*Protection of Animals,*" which I read before the annual meeting of "*the American Social Science Association*" in New-York City, May 21. It was first published by the association, subsequently by the Massachusetts Society

for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, has been put before Congress, and had, and is now having, a very wide circulation in this and other countries.

DIRECTOR OF AMERICAN SOCIAL SCIENCE.

Soon after, I was elected a director of "the American Social Science Association," an office which I have held ever since.

1875.

During this year I gave some forty lectures and addresses on the prevention of cruelty to animals, before a wide variety of audiences, in Massachusetts, Maine, New Hampshire, and Rhode Island, including the faculties and students of "*Harvard University*," "*Dartmouth*," "*Amherst*," and "*Williams*" colleges, "*Mount Holyoke Female Seminary*," "*the New-England Agricultural Society*," "*State Normal School of Rhode Island*," "*Massachusetts State Normal School at Framingham*," and various union meetings of churches on Lord's Days. I thought it important to interest the young gentlemen in our colleges, and wrote the various presidents of those before named, with the above result.

FIRST COLLEGE.

My lecture before the faculty and some four hundred students of Dartmouth College, in the college chapel, on Oct. 4, 1875, was, *so far as I am informed, the first ever given to any college on this subject*. I occupied an hour and ten minutes, and found a most attentive and sympathetic audience.

At the other institutions, also, my receptions were all that I could ask; and, from subsequent correspondence, I have reason to believe that much good was accomplished, and my time and money well spent.

FOUR EXPERIENCES.

Some of my experiences on these lecturing-trips were peculiar. I remember one country bed, which, very likely, had not been slept in for months, and the water in my bowl and pitcher frozen in the morning. I got home with a severe cold, and narrowly escaped more serious consequences. Warned by such experience, I stipulated that I could only go to New Bedford on condition of being kept warm. Here I was entertained in a palace; the latest improvements in steam-heat, also wood-fires in open fireplaces, and the lady occasionally asking, "Mr. Angell, are you warm enough?"

I climbed over a New-Hampshire mountain on one of the most terribly hot days of summer, to find, that, through some mistake, it had been announced that the "Rev. Mr. Angell," of Boston, was to preach that evening. I did preach.

At Brattleborough, Vt., I engaged the town-hall, agreeing to pay all expenses and for its use, and had notice given in the schools. The night of my lecture happened to be one of the hottest of the season. I went to the hall a quarter of an hour in advance, and found it not lighted, only the janitor and half a dozen rough boys. "Why don't you light the hall?" said I. "Well, I thought I'd wait, and see if anybody was coming," said he. "Coming!" said I; "why, here's half a dozen boys already." — "You ain't going to lectur to these boys, are you?" said he. "Certainly I am," said I, "if nobody else comes. *One of them may be governor of Vermont, one of these days, for aught I know.*" So he lit the hall, and gradually some hundreds gathered; and now they have a society in Brattleborough, Vt., for the prevention of cruelty to animals.

One of the most interesting audiences of the year, and one of the most attentive, was the hundreds of rough boys and young men in the State Reform School. So far as appearances went, they were all in favor of kindness to animals.

During this year, in addition to other matters for the press, I furnished for some time a weekly animal-protection column for the "*Boston Daily Evening Transcript.*" I also wrote for the "*New-England Journal of Education*" a long article entitled "The New Gospel of Humanity: the Teacher's Opportunity," intended to show the effect of teaching kindness to animals, on the prevention of crime. This had a wide circulation among American teachers.

CRIME.

At this time, in my readings as director of the "American Social Science Association" and otherwise, my attention was strongly drawn to the statistics of the increase of crime in this country; and, the more I investigated, the worse it seemed. I prepared and gave an address upon this subject before the annual meeting of "*Massachusetts State Teachers' Association*" in Boston, on Dec. 28, which was widely reported by the Boston press; and on the next day appeared, in all our daily papers, a letter signed by me, *proposing a society, first, "to carefully investigate our causes of crime; and, second, to put in operation the most judicious measures of prevention."* To such a

society I offered to contribute both time and money. The press recommended it, but the public did not respond.

1876.

During this year I addressed, in behalf of animals, some very large and important audiences, among them the students of "*Boston University*;" various schools, — high, grammar, and Sunday; a large audience at Saratoga Springs; "*the National Conference of Unitarian Churches*" at Saratoga Springs; a great "*Methodist-Episcopal Conference*" at Chicago, Ill.; "*the Young Men's Christian Association*" at Detroit, Mich.; also, in the same city, *the Unitarian Church*; *the high school* of some seven hundred pupils; and, last, about two thousand people on Sunday night, in the *Detroit Opera House*, resulting in the formation or re-formation of a society for the prevention of cruelty to animals in that city.

LECTURE ON CRIME.

But the larger portion of my time this year was given in endeavors to call public attention to the great increase of crime, including crimes against animals, and in advocating various remedies; among them, as most important, *a wider humane, moral, and unsectarian religious education in our public schools*. After very careful and wide investigation, I gathered and compiled statistics, and wove them into a lecture, which I gave before the *Episcopal clergy* of Boston and vicinity; also before the *Congregational, Baptist*, and twice before the *Methodist-Episcopal, clergy* of Boston and vicinity; *the Young Men's Christian Union*; and various other important Massachusetts audiences. Outside the State, I gave it before the annual meeting of "*the American Social Science Association*" at Saratoga Springs; the *Evangelical clergy* of Detroit; the "*Women's Christian Association*" of Detroit; the "*Methodist-Episcopal clergy*" of Chicago; and, subsequently, before the *great Methodist-Episcopal Conference* at Chicago, which, putting aside other exercises, invited me to occupy the entire evening, and, at the close, manifested its interest by a unanimous rising vote of thanks.

A NEW ORDER OF CHIVALRY.

I proposed this year, through the various Boston dailies, *a new order of chivalry* in the schools, somewhat similar to the Bands of Mercy which have since been formed; also two societies, — one to

protect human beings from cruelty, and another to promote higher moral and humane education of the young. All these I offered to aid with time and money.

THE HAYES ELECTION.

On Nov. 13 I addressed the *Episcopal clergy of Boston and vicinity*, the bishop in the chair, on the importance of the clergy taking action in view of the great danger threatened by the contested election of President Hayes. A few days after, I wrote a letter, which appeared in the various Boston dailies, in which I proposed union meetings of the clergy in all our principal cities North and South, by which the whole power of the Christian Church, through pulpits, press, meetings for prayer, and petitions to Congress, should be brought to bear, if necessary, to prevent civil war.

NATIONAL UNITARIAN CONFERENCE.

Some of my experiences during this year were of special interest. I had applied in 1874 for a hearing before the "*Biennial National Unitarian Conference*" to be held at Saratoga Springs, to bring the claims of animals before that wealthy and influential denomination; but I applied too late, the time being crowded with engagements already made. I kept the matter in mind, however; and, when the next conference met this year, I contrived to appear on the floor as delegate from a small Unitarian church, near Boston, to which I had occasionally given money. But here again I found the conference crowded with Unitarian clergymen from different parts of the country.

I was determined to be heard, and so selected the principal point of the most interesting day, when the conference was fullest, and, between the essays of Dr. Ellis and James Freeman Clarke, broke in upon the programme by offering a resolution that "*kindness to animals should be taught in Unitarian Sunday schools.*" It was referred to a committee. Next day they reported that from lack of time my subject could not be considered. Before I could rise to speak, Dr. Bellows of New York, leading clergyman of the denomination, took the floor, and in words I shall never forget said, "*I don't think that our denomination can quite afford to give the cold shoulder to this great moral movement of the day. I move that the gentleman have the privilege of addressing this conference.*" That settled the question: I addressed the conference. Some thousands of copies of our humane publications were distributed, to be carried over the country. I received the thanks of many clergymen, and was invited to present my cause in various leading Unitarian pulpits.

EXPERIENCES AT DETROIT.

At Detroit, Mich., I called upon the leading Congregational clergyman of the city, — his church probably the largest and most influential. I proposed to lecture in his church Sunday evening. He gave the matter careful consideration, but finally said that he didn't believe the people of that city were quite up to hearing about *animals* on the Lord's Day. So I accepted an invitation to address the *Trinitarian* clergy of the city on crime, Monday morning; and went to the Unitarian church to talk in the Lord's house, on the Lord's Day, about the Lord's dumb creatures. It resulted probably quite as well; as in the Unitarian Church were the governor of the State, the leading editor of its leading paper, and various other influential gentlemen, upon whose invitation I repeated my address the following Sunday night in the Opera House to about two thousand people; and the Congregational clergyman then gave me a most pressing invitation to speak in his church also.

I visited the stock-yards at Detroit, *incog.*; talked with the employees; ascertained how dead and dying animals, which could be carried no farther, were taken off the cars there, and put into the markets; and told my audience at the Opera House much more about their meats than they had previously known.

AT CHICAGO.

At Chicago I had no difficulty in addressing first the Methodist-Episcopal clergy of the city, and subsequently the great Methodist Conference, on *crime*; but when I came to *animals*, that was a more doubtful subject, and I waited several days before I got the desired hearing, and told them of the cruelties that were being practised daily at the stock-yards, within sight of the church-spires and sound of the sabbath-bells of that city.

THE SMALLEST AUDIENCE.

The smallest audience I addressed this year turned out to be probably the largest. It was at the Chicago Athenæum, on invitation of Mr. Ferd. W. Peck, a very prominent citizen, and vice-president of the society; only some forty persons present, and I think I was hardly ever more disappointed. But when I closed my lecture, and came down from the platform, I was introduced to a quiet-looking gentleman sitting there, who joined the Humane Society that night, and whose eloquent voice and pen have since spoken to hundreds of thousands in behalf of those that cannot speak for themselves. *It was Prof. Swing of Chicago.*

1877.

During this year I gave various lectures and addresses to Massachusetts audiences, but none outside the State.

A FUNNY INCIDENT.

In February the Boston and Maine Railroad Company proposed to reduce the pay of their engineers, which was already quite low enough. It resulted in a strike: this resulted in a proposition to enact by the Legislature, then in session, a law against the locomotive engineers, of most unwarranted severity. A committee of the engineers came to me, asking help. I sent them to Wendell Phillips, but then began to think what I could do to help them at the hearing before the joint railroad committee of Senate and House next morning. I knew it was the custom of railroads to furnish free tickets and passes to all members of the Legislature. There was no question but the pockets of all these gentlemen on the railroad committee were well filled, — *in other words, they were in the pay of the railroads, and yet were to decide between the railroads and their engineers.* I thought I saw a good point: so in the morning I went to the committee-room, which was packed with perhaps from one to two hundred railroad officers and engineers. I told the chairman of the railroad commissioners, who was to present the obnoxious bill, that I had a very short Act, which would not occupy over five minutes, which I would like to submit to the committee before the longer one prepared by him, and that I should be greatly obliged if he would waive his right to priority, and permit me to present my short bill, and then retire. To this he cheerfully assented, and, when called upon by the chairman of the committee, stated that he had arranged with me to present my bill first.

I rose, and read my bill, which was as follows: —

1. Be it enacted, that any locomotive engineer who shall voluntarily, without just cause, abandon his engine on any railroad of this Commonwealth except at the end of his route, shall be punished by fine *not exceeding* one thousand dollars, or imprisonment *not exceeding* one year.

I looked at the committee as they sat around the long table. There was no objection to that.

2. That any railroad corporation which shall hereafter directly, or indirectly, give to any person elected a member of the Legislature of Massachusetts *a free ticket* to pass over any railroad in this Commonwealth, or shall knowingly trans-

port any such member without pay, or attempt in any manner to bribe any member of the Massachusetts Legislature, shall be fined not more than one thousand dollars, and not less than five hundred dollars, for every such offence.

3. That any member of the Massachusetts Legislature who shall during his term of office receive or use any free ticket or other gift from any railroad corporation doing business in this State, shall be thereby rendered incompetent to vote upon any matter relating to the railroads of this Commonwealth.

I looked at the committee again, and they looked at each other. I said, "Mr. Chairman, I do not propose to argue this matter. I simply leave this bill in your hands." I walked to the head of the table, handed him the bill, and immediately left the room. The newspapers got hold of it, and the severe legislation proposed did not pass.

COLONIZATION.

I felt much sympathy with these engineers, thrown out of employment for objecting to the cutting-down of their pay; and wrote the president of the Association of Locomotive Engineers, suggesting that in some most desirable spot where land was cheap, the association should purchase a large tract at low price, and settle upon it all deserving engineers who from any cause should wish to retire, or be thrown out of employment. Excellent lands could be bought for two or three dollars an acre, which with the settlement of a respectable colony would soon be worth twenty, thirty, or forty dollars per acre.

CRIMES AGAINST PUBLIC HEALTH.

During some time past, my attention had been called to the large increase of crimes against public health in poisonous and dangerously adulterated articles of food, drink, groceries, drugs, medicines, poisonous articles of ornament and of clothing, arsenical papers and wall-papers, all of which seemed to be sold in Massachusetts without hinderance.

MARBLEIZED IRON-WARE.

In my investigations, I had frequent occasion to call upon chemists. The last of March, I was in the office of Dr. Hayes, State analyst, when he showed me specimens of a beautifully mottled new cooking-ware, called "marbleized iron-ware," which, in the shape of coffeepots, teapots, frying-pans, and a great variety of dishes, was being largely introduced into the markets. He pronounced it extremely poisonous, containing, with other poison, a large amount of soluble lead. It was manufactured by a wealthy firm in New-York City, whom no one had thus far cared to attack. I immediately

began to investigate, and found that the firm had a large factory for its manufacture. If I remember rightly, they had some hundreds of men employed; and, in a few months, something like a hundred thousand dollars' worth of it had been put on the markets. I found it was being used, not only in hotels and restaurants, but in hospitals to feed the sick; that the sick wife of a friend of mine was having her breakfast prepared every morning in one of these dishes, and that I had narrowly escaped having my own buckwheat-cakes cooked in a similar utensil. It was clearly my duty to attack it. So, in the "*Sunday Herald*" of April 1, having nearly one hundred thousand circulation, under the head of "*Public Caution*," I began the attack. In all our daily papers, on Monday, April 2, and succeeding days, I followed it up. Cuttings from these papers I sent to leading papers all over the country, and to England. The effect was wonderful. The sale of the ware was as dead as Julius Cæsar; and people all over the country were bringing their old teapots and coffee-pots to the sellers, planting them on their counters, and demanding back their money.

The manufacturers hastened, in New-York papers, to pronounce my statements false. I was to be sued for perhaps a hundred thousand dollars damages. The leading partner came to Boston; and a prominent chemist, employed by him, *declared the article harmless*. But, a few days after, the Harvard University chemist came to my defence, with his certificate, "*alive with poison*." This settled the business. The firm discharged their hands, closed their factory, offered to take back all they had sold; and afterwards, as I was informed, manufactured only articles concerning which there could be no dispute. I do not believe the manufacturers supposed they were selling a poisonous article. A beautifully mottled, harmless ware, called "*Granite Iron-ware*," manufactured at St. Louis, had obtained an immense sale. The New-York firm wanted to share the profits: so they employed a chemist, as I was informed, to get up something which would look exactly like it; and this was the result. One unfortunate consequence of this exposure was, that the sale of the *harmless iron-ware* suffered for a time, because it looked so much like the poisonous imitation. But, nevertheless, the "*iron-ware*" company subsequently expressed their gratitude by the gift of various specimens of their manufacture; among which the most valuable, a beautiful water-cooler and stand, I presented to one of our hospitals.

POISONOUS WALL-PAPERS.

Having succeeded so well in this matter, on April 25 I attacked, through the columns of the "Daily Advertiser," "Herald," "Post," "Globe," "Transcript," and "Traveller," *poisonous wall-papers*, of which I had overwhelming evidence that about thirty-three per cent of a great variety of colors were poisonous; and urged that there should be "*a public health association*," to look after such matters, which I would be glad to join.

HYDROPHOBIA.

In the month of May a series of letters appeared in various Boston papers, calculated to alarm our citizens in regard to the dangers of hydrophobia. On the 19th I was warned that there was danger of severe restrictions, by the city government, against dogs, and, hurrying to the City Hall, found a committee then in session on that subject. It was proposed that every *male* dog found on the street, unmuzzled, should be immediately shot by the police; and every *female* dog found on the street should be shot anyhow, whether muzzled or not. The influential gentleman who was urging these orders, and who, as I was informed, had instigated the various letters before referred to, it seemed, was in mortal terror of dogs. He testified, at the subsequent hearing, that "*three times dogs had jumped over his garden-wall, and chased him into his own house.*"

A leading Boston paper, commenting next morning on his evidence, remarked, "*We always knew the dog was a very sagacious animal!*"

Of course I filed a remonstrance, and demanded a public hearing, which was granted for Thursday, May 24. I went to the City Registrar's office, and ascertained that since the keeping of a registry of deaths in Boston began, twenty-four years previous, *only two deaths had been reported by hydrophobia*; and learned, by subsequent inquiry, that it was doubtful whether these were genuine cases. I then, through the columns of all our daily papers, set forth various facts in regard to this disease, and called upon lovers of dogs to be present at the hearing. The result was, that, when the hearing came off, the room was packed; the pleas which I, with others, made in behalf of our four-footed friends, found a responsive audience, and the proposed orders did not pass. The hydrophobia scare had, however, affected other cities, particularly Lawrence; and I prepared a very long and carefully written paper, covering the whole subject, and the best evidence obtainable, which was widely published, and aided in allaying excitement.

LEGIONS OF HONOR.

During this year I devoted much time to urging, through the press and elsewhere, the formation of *Legions of Honor* in our public schools, the pledges of which should be, —

- 1st, To speak no falsehood ;
- 2d, To use no profane language ;
- 3d, To show respect to the aged ;
- 4th, To protect from cruelty all, both human and dumb ; and
- 5th, To endeavor at all times to maintain the right.

Our leading educational and other papers advocated this, and our Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals offered prizes to those who should be most successful in organizing. I offered to address conventions of teachers, also schools, in aid of this object, and did address the annual meeting of "*The Massachusetts State Teachers' Association*" at Boston ; and three of our leading educators consented to act as judges of the prizes. Some legions were formed, but the time had not come.

THE LABOR QUESTION.

During this year the country was financially in bad condition ; times were hard ; there was much suffering among the unemployed poor ; an army of tramps ; and serious difficulties threatened between capital and labor. For the purpose of throwing light upon these difficult problems, a wealthy and philanthropic lady of New-York City offered prizes for the best essays on the labor question. I had given much time to investigating this subject, and wrote, with great care, an essay : but before the time of examination for the prizes, — the last of July, — came the great labor and railroad strikes and riots in Maryland, Pennsylvania, New York, Ohio, and elsewhere ; and I decided it was my duty to publish my essay at once, without regard to prizes, which I did, through the columns of the "*Boston Daily Advertiser*," on Aug. 4 ; and followed it up with supplementary communications, through the same paper, on Aug. 14 and 18. It was widely republished and favorably commented upon by the press in various parts of the country. The "*Louisville Courier-Journal*," in particular, I remember, strongly approved.

1878.

A BUSY YEAR.

This was a busy year. In the first part of it I gave various lectures on the growth of crime and the protection of animals, suggesting in the former, among other things, that charitably disposed persons should adopt a test in dealing with the numerous tramps then wandering over the country, which I had tried with success; namely, *offer them Graham crackers*. In my experience, in nearly every instance the tramp declined.

In February I visited Washington, and passed a week urging upon Congress more stringent laws for the protection of animals in transportation. I had, with others, a hearing before the Committee on Agriculture, and saw many members privately.

During this month, there came another severe attack upon dogs at the State House, in the shape of a proposed law that all *male* dogs should be annually taxed ten dollars, and all *female* dogs twenty dollars. It was a continuation of the hydrophobia scare of the previous summer, taken advantage of by dog-haters, and particularly by agriculturists, who considered the destruction of dogs essential to the protection of sheep. It was intended to have a hearing before the Committee on Agriculture, without notice to dog-owners; but something told me, and I appeared at the hearing, and demanded an adjournment and another hearing, with full notice to all concerned. The committee could not refuse, and appointed it five days later. I immediately, through the various daily papers, called upon friends of dogs to appear at the hearing; and the result was, that about two hundred and fifty people packed the committee-room almost as closely as a sardine-box. With others, I argued the case for the dogs. Able legal counsel were employed on the other side, but the hostile legislation did not pass. Just before going to the hearing, I had put into my hand a Gloucester paper, with an account of three little children going home from school in a great snow-storm, and buried in a drift, whose lives had just been saved by a dog. A Gloucester man appeared to denounce dogs, and I answered him by reading this incident just occurred in his own city. I think there was no hearing at the State House this winter that excited more public attention, or was more widely reported and commented upon by the press.

BLEEDING CALVES. — LIVE-STOCK RING.

In March I attacked, through our various Boston dailies, the *practice of bleeding calves* before they were killed, for the purpose of

making the veal unnaturally white ; also “ *the live-stock ring*,” which was opposing, in Congress and elsewhere, improved cars and other humane provisions for the protection of animals in transportation.

WARNING THE GRANGES.

In May I made, through the columns of the “ *Boston Daily Advertiser*,” another attack on poisonous wall-papers. In June I prepared, with great care, for Benjamin P. Ware, master of the State Grange of Massachusetts, a caution against a great variety of poisonous and poisonously adulterated articles, which, signed by him, I *had printed and sent to thousands of granges* through the country, representing, perhaps, a million of farmers. I had it sent also, the first week in July, to *about forty Boston papers, and to papers of the thirteen leading cities of the United States*, which gave it an immense publication and many editorials.

OLD PRISON AT CHARLESTOWN.

Early in August I urged, through the columns of the “ *Boston Daily Advertiser*,” and wrote the governor of Massachusetts, that the *old prison at Charlestown, Mass.*, should not be sold, as was then proposed, but retained for the more dangerous criminals, while the less dangerous should be kept at Concord. This plan has since been adopted.

COMMUNISM.

About the same time, I wrote the “ *Boston Herald*” on communism, which was then, through Kearney and others, threatening public peace. This article I signed “ *A Workingman*.” During this month and September I twice visited New Hampshire, and lectured on the protection of animals before various union meetings of churches on Lord’s Days ; also before “ *the State Grange of New Hampshire*” at Weirs, and “ *the Sullivan County Agricultural and Mechanics’ Fair*” at Claremont.

MARETT TRACT.

In October I printed and circulated at my own expense, under the name of “ *Marett Tract*,” fifteen thousand copies of the eight-page tract entitled “ *Five Questions Answered*,” and subsequently sixty-two thousand more copies of the same tract.

THE GOVERNOR OF VERMONT.

Oct. 29 I addressed the *Legislature of Vermont* at the State House, Montpelier, and on Oct. 30 the *New-Hampshire Unitarian Conference*, on the claims of animals.

As illustrating the changes in this country : Just before addressing the Vermont Legislature, the governor took me by the hand, and said, "Did you know, that, when you used to come up here fishing, I was the boy that went with you to carry the fish and the bait?" I said, "No." — "*I was the boy*," said he. Now he was governor of Vermont.

SOUTHERN TRIP. — BALTIMORE.

Nov. 11 I started on a Southern tour, to speak for animals. I took part in the meetings of "*The American Humane Association*" at Baltimore. At the close of the meetings I determined to remain a while in Baltimore, and endeavor to awaken public interest in that city, where the claims of animals had thus far received but little attention. For this purpose, I obtained the consent of educational authorities, and addressed the students of "*Johns Hopkins University*," about six hundred students of "*Baltimore College*," about five hundred at the "*Girls' High School*," a large number at the "*Maryland State Normal School*," about two hundred at "*the Friends' School*," and a meeting of Friends in private parlors, and organized "*The Baltimore Humane Education Society*," also about nine hundred convicts in the State Penitentiary, — the first instance, so far as I know, in which convicts in a State prison were ever addressed on this subject.

HOW DWIGHT L. MOODY HELPED THE ANIMALS.

The last day of my stop in Baltimore was a notable one. The great Maryland Sunday-school Convention was in session in one of the largest churches, and every moment occupied. I had applied in vain for permission to speak in behalf of animals. D. L. Moody the evangelist, then in Baltimore, was to take charge of its exercises on the great day of the convention. I went to his house, and asked him to speak for those that could not speak for themselves. He said, "Come, and speak yourself." I said, "They will not let me." He said, "Come to the church to-morrow morning." I was there promptly with two thousand copies of "*Marett Tract*." The great church was packed, every seat full, the aisles full; from one to two hundred clergymen, perhaps, on the platform; each county with its banner. No admission except by ticket. In a few moments Mr. Moody came. "Follow me," said he. He took me through the crowd to the platform. "Put your tracts here, and follow me," he said; and in one minute I found myself on the front of the platform, in the chair which had apparently been reserved for him. He called

for another chair ; gave out one of his beautiful melodies ; then sent the contribution-boxes around, ordered them up on to the platform so that all the ministers might have a chance to give, then sent them down to the vestry, saying, " I don't want any money rattling around here ; " then another melody ; then spoke some twenty minutes, bringing tears to the eyes of many ; then broke off suddenly, and, while every eye was upon him, said, "*My friend Mr. Angell, of Boston, is now going to talk to you about kindness to animals, a most important subject for Sunday-schools.*— Step forward, Mr. Angell, and speak." I do not think there was ever a more astonished audience. I am sure, that, during the fifteen minutes I addressed them, I never had a more attentive one. At the close, he at once took charge of the distribution of the tracts, and added words of kindness which I shall never forget. And that is how D. L. Moody helped the animals.

RICHMOND.

From Baltimore I went directly to Richmond for two purposes, — *first*, to attend the annual meeting of the American Public-health Association, of which I was a member, and, if possible, get action on the subject of poisonous and dangerous adulterations ; and, *second*, to push the claims of animals. In the first object I failed, as the country had been very much alarmed over the spread of yellow-fever ; and nearly the whole time of the convention was devoted to that subject, lots of things having precedence of mine being shut out. But in the second I succeeded.

NATIONAL GRANGE.

The National Grange, composed of State masters and their wives from nearly every State, and *representing, perhaps, a million of agriculturists*, was in session in the Representatives Hall at the State House. I had an entire hour given me to address them, and through them was able to send humane publications to almost every State in the Union. The Grange passed, at my request, strong resolutions, calling upon Congress to enact laws to secure the merciful transportation of animals on railroads ; also, "*that it should be made the duty of teachers in our public schools to instruct the children under their care to protect insect-eating birds and their nests, and to treat animals kindly.*"

I also addressed the high school of the city and the largest Sunday school, and then started for Washington.

PRESIDENT HAYES.

While at Richmond, Mr. Nathan Appleton of Boston wrote me from Washington, that he had seen President Hayes, and the President had authorized him to say, that, if I would write what I thought ought to go into his annual message to Congress on the subject of transportation of animals, *if he liked it* he would put it in. I wrote the President at once, and, on arrival at Washington, called upon him to learn his decision. He told me *it was already in the message*; and, a few days after, it appeared in print, almost *verbatim* as I had written.

WASHINGTON.

In Washington I gave a series of lectures on the claims of animals. first to a very large audience in *All Souls' Church*, Sunday evening; and, subsequently, before the students of *Howard University*, *Wayland Seminary*, the *White Training School for Teachers*, and the *Miner School*, and formed the *Washington Humane Education Society*.

MONUMENT TO YELLOW-FEVER HEROES.

There was a good deal of hard feeling at Washington, at that time, between North and South; and it was not helped by the *monuments of Northern generals* erected in public squares, constantly reminding our Southern fellow-citizens of the result of the war.

The summer before, yellow-fever had swept the South; and Northern men and women, as well as Southern, had gone down to nurse the sick and dying, and had died themselves in the discharge of duty.

It seemed to me that here was a chance to erect a monument at the National Capital which should stand forever to cement our common country. Somebody must start it. Why not I? I called upon a prominent citizen of Washington, who at once became interested, and offered to push the work. So, just before leaving, I put twenty-five dollars into his hands, with this letter:—

EBBITT HOUSE, WASHINGTON, D.C., Dec. 3, 1878.

—, Esq.

My dear Sir,—Though not a wealthy man, I have a strong desire to give twenty-five dollars towards the erection of a monument at Washington *to the heroes, living and dead, who, in 1878, fought yellow-fever in our Southern cities and towns*. Will you kindly permit me to deposit the above amount in your hands, as the beginning of a national fund for the above purpose, and much oblige

Your obedient servant,

GEO. T. ANGELL.

I am sorry to say that the monument was never erected, and so the twenty-five dollars was given by the gentleman in question to another charity. *It has always seemed to me, that monuments which commemorate the triumphs in battle of one half a nation over the other, or of one Christian nation over another Christian nation, had better be levelled, and other monuments erected to commemorate the days on which peace was declared.*

1879.

SOME OF THE HARDEST WORK OF MY LIFE.

In 1879 I did some of the hardest work of my life. I had been gathering, as before appears, a vast amount of evidence of poisonous and dangerous adulterations. I had enough to fill a large volume; and I was determined to put the most important before the public, through the press, as widely as possible. I knew that I should attack large amounts of capital, and probably incur misrepresentation and abuse. Nevertheless, I thought it a duty.

THE WAR ON ADULTERATION.

So I prepared, with great care, a paper entitled "*Public Health Associations*," in which I condensed the most startling facts I had been able to gather. It was in the highest degree sensational. I intended it should be. I wanted to bring on a war of discussion, which should wake the nation. Yet I was careful to state only what I could prove, for I had little doubt I should be called upon to do it.

I stated that more than three hundred ignorant and uneducated persons were practising medicine in Boston; that probably half the vinegar sold in our cities was rank poison; that peppers and mustard were adulterated with lead; that a large portion of our pickles were more or less poisonous; also many of our flavoring-oils, sirups, jellies, and preserved fruits; that cocoa and chocolate were adulterated with mineral substances, and coffee-berries had been moulded out of chicory and other substances; that several mills in New England were grinding white stone into fine powder of three grades, called *soda*, *sugar*, and *flour*; that thousands of barrels of terra-alba were sold in our cities every year, to be mixed with confectionery and other sugar products, also with baking-powders, which in many cases contained also alum; that it was estimated by a medical commission of the Board of Health of Boston, that *over a million and a half gallons of water, liable to come from most impure and dangerous sources, were sold in our city every year, mixed with milk, for which nearly*

five hundred thousand dollars in money was annually paid; that infant mortality was about four times as great in Boston as in the country, and that I had reason to believe that thousands of gallons of so-called milk, sold in Boston, did not contain one drop of the genuine article. I stated the enormous amounts of oleomargarine butter and cheese liable to come from the filthiest fats of diseased animals, and never subjected to heat sufficient to kill living organisms they might contain. I showed the enormous adulterations of wines, liquors, drugs, and medicines, so that physicians could not, in many cases, know the strength of their prescriptions. I gave evidence of poisonous qualities of tin cans and other tin-ware; also of vast amounts of arsenic and other poisons used in articles of clothing, ornament, and use, particularly in colored papers and wall-papers, of which about thirty-three per cent of a wide variety of colors had been found poisonous; and I devoted considerable space to showing that sugars, sirups, and molasses were dangerously adulterated.

The remedy was *public health associations*, composed of influential citizens, supported by voluntary contributions, and employing chemists, microscopists, and officers that could not be bribed.

I read this paper on Jan. 8, 1879, before the annual Boston meeting of the *American Social Science Association*, at the School of Technology. It was published in full in most of our daily papers, and woven into editorials in the rest. I sent printed copies of it very widely over the country to newspapers and others, and then waited the storm.

THE CHEMISTS.

I waited nine days, when, on Jan. 17, in the "Boston Herald," came a reply from a Boston chemist, who was also milk-inspector of a Massachusetts city. He asserted that *not over five per cent*, and he thought *not over three per cent*, of the milk of Boston, was adulterated. (*Within a few weeks after, it was proved that he himself was selling receipts to milkmen to aid them in adulterating, and he resigned his position as milk-inspector.*) He thought there was *less* adulteration of food and medicines than ever before; that the *existing laws were ample*, — *no adulteration of teas in this country; coffee too cheap to adulterate, sugar too cheap to adulterate with terra-alba.* If a buyer didn't know that he was eating oleomargarine, then it was good enough for him. *Less adulterations of wines and liquors than ever before; adulterations decreasing every year.* He didn't know of any such article as artificial milk (*subsequently he admitted that he knew it was used in Paris during the German siege, and that he had manufactured it in his own office*), etc.

Another chemist opened his batteries by declaring that there were *no adulterated sugars in this country*, etc. And the *State liquor-inspector* declared that the wines and liquors he had been called upon to analyze contained "very little worse than water;" which statement resulted, curiously enough, in the introduction of a bill in the Legislature to abolish the office, *inasmuch as it was not worth while for the State to pay twenty-five hundred dollars a year for analyzing what was 'no worse than water.'*" The bill did not pass; but the salary was reduced, if I remember rightly, to fifteen hundred dollars.

TEN DAYS IN "BOSTON HERALD."

The battle was on for which I had been two years preparing. I called upon the leading editor of the "Herald," and told him that I was at his service; and for *ten days*, through the columns of the "Herald," with a daily circulation of considerably over a hundred thousand, I put in the evidence.

The *first* day, I took milk and diseased meats; the *second*, sugars and candies; the *third*, tea and coffee; the *fourth*, oleomargarine and tin-ware; the *fifth*, vinegar, pickles, baking-powders, mustard, cocoa, cloves, cinnamon, ginger, soothing-sirups; the *sixth and seventh*, poisonous wall-papers, showing, among other things, that the Michigan State Board of Health had prepared a book, entitled "*Shadows from the Walls of Death*," containing seventy-five representative samples of these poisonous papers of various colors, and *had caused a copy to be placed in every important public library of the State as a warning to the people*; *eighth*, glucose, liquors, drugs, cosmetics, poisonous toys, cards, and other poisonous papers; *ninth*, lead and arsenic in dress-goods, and a great variety of articles of dress, ornament, and common use; and, *tenth*, a large amount of general evidence, and a plea for public-health associations and organizations to remedy this great evil.

WHAT THE PAPERS SAID.

To give the details of the newspaper-war which followed during several months, would require a volume. One trade-paper declared that I had "*attacked every trade in the city of Boston*." I replied that I had only attacked the *rascals* in every trade. In another paper, I saw that a public meeting was to be called in Faneuil Hall, to denounce my charges. I offered to pay twenty-five dollars for the privilege of addressing the meeting.

No Boston daily paper, as I remember, took ground against me:

they either sustained or stood non-committal ; and many of them did good service in my support. So, also, did many weeklies and country papers. The "*Springfield Republican*," I remember, in particular, with the pen of Frank B. Sanborn, secretary of the American Social-science Association, gave some of the keenest thrusts at my opponents ; and the "*Massachusetts Ploughman*," owned by my friend George Noyes, did manly service. So also, while these various chemists were attacking, *other* chemists came openly to my aid ; and *others*, who for various reasons did not wish to be openly quoted, gave me confidential support.

CITIZENS' TRADE ASSOCIATION.

On April 21, by special invitation, I lectured on the subject before the *Citizens' Trade Association of East Boston*, composed of some two hundred leading merchants and business men. My wife thought, in the existing excitement, my audience might prove a stormy one. I was never listened to more attentively in my life. At the close, I received a unanimous general vote of thanks, and the personal thanks of perhaps some forty persons ; and the entire lecture was published in the leading East-Boston paper, occupying eleven and a half columns. And, indeed, I may properly say here, that in all the battles that followed on this subject, lasting through several years, although I publicly attacked practices which gave employment to thousands of persons, and from which came enormous profits, and did my best to stop them, I am not aware that I ever received in return in the streets of Boston the slightest insult. Friends expressed to me their wonder that I was not assaulted, and declared that I was taking imprudent risks ; but I am inclined to think that the very classes I attacked, while they did not wish to abandon practices that were enriching them, still, in their hearts, respected me.

SHOOTING LIVE PIGEONS FOR SPORT.

In the first of March I took part in another battle, to which I always look back with pleasure. Several hundreds of our wealthy and influential young gentlemen, and also some older ones, had formed themselves into clubs for the purpose of following the *English fashion of shooting live pigeons* from traps for sport. It was a cruel practice, — cruel in methods of catching the pigeons, and cruel in the keeping of them weeks and months in little cages, until they were wanted ; cruel in the outrages sometimes practised in plucking out feathers, or putting out an eye, and other tricks, to affect their

flight; and cruel in the mangling and wounding of those not killed. We were determined to stop it in Massachusetts if possible. The clubs felt safe, and were not really alarmed, I think, until we had pushed the bill making it illegal through the House of Representatives, and got it before the Judiciary Committee of the Senate. Here they made their stand, and brought all their guns to bear.

They were represented by three able counsel, brought petitions with very wealthy and influential names, and attended personally in large number. The hearing occupied three days, March 11, 12, and 14, and was the longest hearing of the session, I think.

THE CLERGY.

On Monday, March 10, the day before the hearing began, there was a meeting of some four hundred of the Protestant clergy of Boston and vicinity. I went to that meeting, and asked permission to speak, laid the matter before them, and asked them to pass a resolution calling upon the Legislature to enact our law. They passed it unanimously; and the next morning I was able to offset the petitions of some hundreds of *Massachusetts pigeon-shooters*, with the petition of *about four hundred Massachusetts clergymen*. I conducted the case, making the opening and closing arguments; being greatly aided by Mr. A. Firth, our secretary, and Capt. Currier, our chief officer. I endeavored to draw the distinction between sport and cruelty; told these gentlemen that pigeon-shoots belonged to the same family with dog-fights and cock-fights, and in our Commonwealth there could not be *one law* for the rich and *another* for the poor.

I urged them to abandon a sport to which they were not willing to take their wives and little daughters; and, when their counsel said there were two sides to the question, I replied that there *were* two sides to the question, — *one* represented by the Governor of our State, in our great Music Hall, at the annual meeting of our society, in the presence of an audience of three thousand persons, giving prizes to children for the best compositions on kindness to animals; and the *other* by the dog-fight, the cock-fight, and the pigeon-shoot.

Our law passed the Senate by a vote of about two to one, and has never to my knowledge been violated but once since; and, as we have about five hundred prosecuting-agents through the State, if it ever had been, I think I should have known it. In the one instance, it was reported to me within twenty-four hours after it occurred; and the six young gentlemen who participated were by my orders promptly arrested and convicted, and paid about sixty dollars fines and costs.

THE FIRST CONVICTION IN THE WORLD.

I am told, and believe, that this was the first conviction ever obtained in the world for this brutal sport.

On March 25, occurred the annual public meeting of our society in Tremont Temple, at which I presided, and gave an address before a large audience, and was followed by Wendell Phillips, Phillips Brooks, J. Boyle O'Reilly, Rev. James Freeman Clarke, and Nathan Appleton. My address appeared in full in "The Boston Daily Advertiser" of March 26.

About this time a wealthy gentleman of Boston undertook to form a "Public Health Association," and called upon me for help. He obtained an Act of incorporation, and many names of our best citizens. For reasons which it is not necessary to give, it did not prove a success; and, aside from the information that had been put before the public, the adulteration battle seemed likely to result in no decisive action.

STRIKE AGAIN.

One of the trade papers which had opposed my efforts had compared me to an old clock which *once wound up would never stop striking*. I liked the simile, and thought I would strike again. So I prepared, with great care, another paper longer than the first, and containing a larger amount of evidence, and arranged to read this before the national meeting of the American Social Science Association at Saratoga Springs, Sept. 10, where it would be very widely reported, *provided it should not by some trick be suppressed*. I suspected efforts would be made to suppress it. So I had it set up in print in our "Boston Daily Advertiser" office in advance, and slips sent to leading papers of the country. I read the paper; and at the close a man from New-York City rose in the audience, and without argument or proof simply pronounced my statements false. I did not think it worth while to reply. The next day I found that the Associated Press agent had been arranged with *not* to report my paper, but simply to send over the country the fact that *I had made certain statements about adulteration, which a New-York gentleman pronounced false*. This agent afterwards explained that he had been very much deceived by the New-York man, who was subsequently ascertained to be connected with the great oleomargarine manufacturers of that city. I am glad to say that the precaution I had taken, of having slips sent off in advance to leading papers of the country, upset the New-York man's calculations; and before the meeting at which I read the paper closed, a companion brought him a newspaper containing

my paper; and a friend of mine sitting behind them heard, with language not to be repeated, the statement that now "the — thing would go all over the country." He was about right. It did travel very widely.

SARATOGA HUMANE SOCIETY.

I stopped at Saratoga Springs about a week after the close of the Social Science meetings, and gave addresses on "Kindness to Animals," in churches and before the various Sunday schools; also at the town-hall, and two meetings at the United-States Hotel, at the last of which I was glad to aid in organizing the "*Saratoga Humane Society*."

DETROIT AND CHICAGO.

Passing the next Sunday at Niagara Falls, I went to Detroit, where I addressed the "*Prismatic Club*," composed of leading citizens of that city, on "Crimes against Public Health."

From thence to Chicago, where on Oct. 8, 9, and 10, I attended the annual meetings of the *American Humane Association*, and visited the stock-yards, finding that eight hundred and thirty-three swine had been taken from the cars, dead, the morning of my visit, by reason of cruel transportation.

MOST IMPORTANT EVIDENCE.

At the close of these meetings, I addressed by invitation the *homœopathic physicians* of the city, and searched out the leading chemists and microscopists to obtain their testimony in regard to poisonous and dangerous adulterations, *which I found most important and overwhelming*. This I took with great care, then fortified it with certificates of their professional standing from judges of the courts and distinguished citizens, and a very strong letter from Dr. De-Wolf, commissioner of public health, in which he urged "the pressing need of National and State legislation to prevent the enormous sales of foods and other articles dangerous to public health."

"*The Chicago Times*" tried hard to get the exclusive right of first publication; which I declined, and so it appeared in full in the "*Chicago Tribune*," "*Inter-Ocean*," and "*Staats-Zeitung*," of Oct. 22 the "*Times*" publishing an interview with me instead.

On Oct. 24 I addressed the semi-annual meeting of the *Illinois Microscopical Society*, on the same subject.

MILWAUKEE.

Oct. 25, with Mr. Edwin Lee Brown, president of the American Humane Association, and at his suggestion, I went to Milwaukee, and addressed the *Fortnightly Club*, composed of leading citizens, on the protection of animals.

WISCONSIN HUMANE SOCIETY.

On Oct. 30 I gave another address before the same club at the Plankinton House, and assisted in organizing the *Wisconsin Humane Society*, which has become a very influential organization.

Sunday, Nov. 2, I lectured in the morning in the *Unitarian Church* of Rev. Mr. Gordon, now president of the Humane Society, on "*The Relations of Animals that can speak, to those that are Dumb*;" and in the evening gave the same lecture before a large union meeting of churches in the *Calvary Presbyterian Church*. Monday evening, Nov. 3, I lectured before the *Popular Science Society*, on "Crimes against Public Health;" and Nov. 4, started for Minnesota.

MINNEAPOLIS.

Nov. 9 (Sunday evening) I lectured in *Rev. Dr. Tuttle's church*, the finest in Minneapolis, to an audience of about eight hundred. My lecture was fully reported in the papers, and resulted in my being urged to occupy the same pulpit the next Sunday night, Nov. 16, when I had an audience of nearly a thousand. Nov. 17 I addressed a meeting of the Trinitarian clergy of the city, on the growth of crime, including crimes against public health and crimes against animals. At the close they unanimously voted to invite me to repeat it before a union meeting of the churches, at the Academy of Music, the next Sunday evening, at which the governor of the State should be invited to preside.

LADIES' MORAL AND HUMANE EDUCATION SOCIETY.

Nov. 20 I addressed a large meeting of ladies at the private school-hall of Miss Judson, daughter of the celebrated missionary Adoniram Judson, and organized the *Ladies' Moral and Humane Education Society* of Minneapolis. Nov. 21 I lectured on animals before the *Minnesota Episcopal Convocation*, then in session; and Sunday evening, Nov. 23, on crime, — *first*, in the *Academy of Music*, to an audience crowding the entire building, and presided over by the governor; and, *second*, to an overflow-meeting of several hundreds, presided over by one of the judges, in *Association Hall*.

I remained in Minneapolis several days, to aid in establishing the Moral and Humane Education Society, giving several addresses; and, on Dec. 3, went to St. Paul, where I lectured Saturday evening, Dec. 6, in the large *Presbyterian Church*, on crime, and Sunday evening, Dec. 7, in the *Unitarian Church*, on animals.

I made a short stop in this city; as they already had a State society for the prevention of cruelty to animals, and there was at the time great religious excitement on account of the presence of two evangelists, who were holding meetings which enlisted the churches.

Dec. 9 I went to Brainerd, on the Northern Pacific Railroad, returned next day, started for home Dec. 11, and arrived the 19th, *having given just thirty lectures and addresses* since leaving Boston, and *contracted a bad cold, resulting in bronchitis*, which troubled me during the entire winter.

1880.

As the result of my bronchitis, with the exception of five hearings before committees of the Massachusetts Legislature I did no public speaking this year until the annual meeting of our society in Boston Music Hall, April 9, at which some twenty-five hundred persons were present. Here I gave the opening address, published in May "Our Dumb Animals," and was followed by Gov. Long, Mayor Prince, Judge Russell, Hon. Patrick Collins, and Hon. Henry P. Kidder.

THE WAR ON ADULTERATION CONTINUED.

Public attention had been now widely attracted to dangerous and poisonous adulterations; the press of the country was publishing much on the subject, and I was frequently called upon to give information, or write articles. The great adulterating interests, involving many millions of capital, were aroused; and I was told, that, at the annual meeting of the "American Social Science Association" at Saratoga Springs this year, chemists were to come from various parts of the country to refute my charges, and allay public excitement. So I quietly packed my trunk, filling the bottom with nearly half a bushel of the evidences of adulteration, and went to a quiet spot in the White Mountains to get ready.

I knew perfectly well that the great oleomargarine and glucose interests alone could easily raise a million of dollars as a fighting-fund, and would not yield their enormous profits without a struggle; and I determined to fight it out on that line, not only in the words of Gen. Grant, "if it took all summer," but if it took five years, until I could spread before the country the facts I had gathered.

With the exception of a few lectures in New Hampshire on kindness to animals, and crime, and many letters, I devoted the entire summer vacation to preparing for the battle at Saratoga; and, on Sept. 6, put in an appearance there, armed *cap-à-pie* with a paper full of facts fortified by indisputable evidence.

THE BATTLE WITH THE CHEMISTS AT SARATOGA.

The battle came on the evening of Sept. 8. The chemists put in their evidence, which was, in substance, that there was very little dangerous adulteration, and no cause of public alarm. As a director of the association, I obtained the privilege of both opening and closing the discussion, and the audience of some four hundred remained until half-past ten o'clock to hear it out. If I could judge by applause, the audience were with me from beginning to end. I put in the gist of what I had before published, much that was new, and backed it up not only by Eastern authorities, but also by *the overwhelming evidence of the chemists, microscopists, and health-officers of the West, particularly at Chicago, and that again by the evidence of judges of the courts and prominent citizens* in regard to their scientific standing. I then made the other side three propositions:—

1st, I would pay to the treasurer of the Social Science Association one hundred dollars. They should do the same. They should prepare an essay showing *little* danger to public health. I would prepare another of precisely the same length, showing *great* danger. The two should be published in one pamphlet, and sent to the newspapers of the country.

2d, I would appoint the president, general secretary, or treasurer of the association, or any other upon whom we could agree, referee, and, at a time and place fixed, would meet all comers; and, if they could prove a single statement of mine untrue, I would pay the whole costs of reference, and we would give it wide publication.

3d, I would meet them at any hour or place, for discussions.

They accepted none of these propositions, and so the matter was left.

At request of the Saratoga Humane Society, which I had helped to found the previous year, I remained at Saratoga a few days; and on Sunday evening, Sept. 19, lectured on the claims of animals, to a union-meeting of churches, in the large Methodist Church; and the next evening, by request, repeated the lecture in the Baptist Church. I then returned to Boston, more determined than ever to keep striking at adulteration, which I was sure was injuring the health and shortening the lives of hundreds of thousands of our people.

NATIONAL GRANGE

I wrote the Master of the *National Grange*, which I addressed a Richmond, Va., on protection of animals, in 1878, and which was to meet this year at Washington, on Nov. 22, asking permission to address that body on adulterations; and was cordially invited to do so.

PRESIDENT HAYES.

I wrote President Hayes, that he had two years before kindly put in his annual message to Congress what I had written on transportation of animals, and asked him to call attention in his next message to adulterations of our foods. I addressed, on Oct. 18, the *Congregational* clergy of Boston and vicinity, and, on Oct. 25, the *Episcopal* clergy.

BOSTON BOARD OF TRADE.

I addressed the Boston Board of Trade on Nov. 11. *At this last meeting, I proposed as referee, our chief-justice, either of three other of our most prominent lawyers (two of whom were judges), or either of three of our most prominent merchants, or any other upon whom we could agree; and, if a single statement of mine should be proved untrue, I would pay the costs of reference to the amount of five hundred dollars.* And I offered to read the paper I had prepared, before every board of trade, every city government, and every legislature in the United States, not too far distant, at my own expense. All this, with report of the paper, was widely published in the "Boston Daily Advertiser" of Nov. 12, 1880, and to some extent in other Boston papers.

TO WASHINGTON.

I determined that I would go to Washington, spend the winter there, bring the matter before Congress, and get, if possible, my evidence sent over the country in the authoritative form of a congressional report. And on Nov. 13 I started.

WHY I STOPPED AT HARTFORD.

I stopped at Hartford, Conn., three days; and the following, which appeared in the "Journal of Education" and "Our Dumb Animals," of August, 1881, will explain why I stopped at Hartford:—

THE POWER OF ONE SCHOOLGIRL.

Last fall I was called upon at my hotel, near the White Mountains, by a modest schoolgirl from Hartford, Conn., who was stopping at a little cottage

about two miles from the village. She told me how much she had suffered from the cruelties inflicted on animals in her State, there being no society there for their protection, and she asked me if I could do any thing to help stop them. I said, "When you go home, see if you can't get a meeting in some of your churches on Sunday evening; and on my way to Washington, where I am to spend the winter, I will stop and lecture, and we will see what can be done."

A few weeks after, I received a note, that she had succeeded in getting a church, and her father and mother wished me to come to their house. I reached Hartford Saturday night, and found what this schoolgirl, between school-hours and her lessons, had been able to do. She had gone to the Rev. Dr. Burton, of the large Presbyterian Church, and asked if he would kindly help her by giving his church one Sunday evening to considering the sufferings of God's dumb creatures, and he said he would. Then she went to some other clergymen, and asked them if they would kindly help by giving up their meetings that one evening, and they said they would. Then she went to the editors, and asked if they would kindly help by writing something, and they said they would; and then she went to some of the prominent citizens, and invited them to come to the meeting. When I entered the church Sunday evening, I found one of the finest audiences it was ever my privilege to address, — the very cream of Hartford. At the close of my lecture, Dr. Burton rose in the pulpit, and proposed, although the hour was about half-past nine, that those who could conveniently remain after the benediction should do so, and give their names then and there to organize a society. Nearly two hundred, as I remember, remained, and the next day a large number of other names were sent in; and the "Connecticut Humane Society" — a *live* organization, which will probably continue its work of humanity a hundred years after the writer of this article shall rest from his labors — now stands as a monument of the power of one modest but earnest schoolgirl. — G. T. ANGELL, in *Journal of Education*.

The schoolgirl was Miss Gertrude O. Lewis of Hartford.

PHILADELPHIA.

I stopped also in Philadelphia, Nov. 16, 17, 18, and 19, to attend the annual meetings of the "American Humane Association." On the evening of the 17th I gave a public address in *Association Hall*, and with Mrs. Angell reached Washington Saturday evening, Nov. 20, to begin my winter campaign.

THE CAMPAIGN AT WASHINGTON.

It was a campaign, as I soon found, in which there was to be plenty of hard work.

The letter which I had written President Hayes, in which I told him what I proposed, had been sent by him to the *acting* officers of the *National Board of Health*, and was immediately forwarded to the man in New York who two years before, at Saratoga Springs, manipulated the Associated Press to suppress my paper. Of course the oleo-margarine and glucose rings knew just what I was up to. An active

lobbyist was put at work. Washington papers were fixed to afford me no aid; officers of the National Board of Health could find no time to listen to my paper; and wires had been so skilfully manipulated that I came very near being defeated in reading it before the National Grange. *A prominent officer of the National Board of Health* assured me, that, if I expected to accomplish any thing at Washington in stopping adulteration, I was mistaken; and a prominent lawyer friend of mine, an old resident, told me, that, considering the vast capital and political influence concerned, I had undertaken a job *as hopeless* as to *storm the rock of Gibraltar*. And I declare that for the remainder of this year the prospect could hardly have been more discouraging. *Circulars were sent from New-York City warning Congressmen to have nothing to do with me.* Every move I made seemed to be watched. I found that among those working against me was a man who had once been tried for murder. I detected him following me in the evening, and was warned by friends that I had better be careful on the streets after dark. By dint of constant pertinacious pushing, I succeeded in getting a hearing appointed by the *Committee on Manufactures* of the House of Representatives, on Dec. 16; but when the time arrived, only three of the committee put in an appearance, and, as there was no quorum, nothing could be done. At the close of 1880 I had made no progress at Washington. Of course, I knew some members of Congress who gave me kind words; but I had found no man who was willing to do battle against the great political and financial power of adulteration.

1881.

SUNSHINE: A SOCIETY FOR THE PREVENTION OF CRUELTY TO ANIMALS.

A change of tactics was clearly needed. I had another object in spending the winter at Washington, namely, to revive its dead Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, or start another; and so I went at that. I found George L. Douglas, Gen. Graham, J. B. T. Tupper, and a few others ready to co-operate. Notices were put in the daily papers, and a meeting called at my rooms, 918 McPherson Square, Jan. 25. In the mean time, I lectured on protection of animals, in the Rev. Dr. Rankin's large Congregational Church, Sunday evening, Jan. 9, and did lots of outside talking. At the meeting of Jan. 25 I gave an address, and forty-one persons joined. Jan. 29 I addressed another meeting at my rooms, and about forty more joined. Sunday, Jan. 30, I repeated the lecture on protection of animals, in Rev. Dr. Butler's Memorial Church, to

a crowded audience. Feb. 7 we had another meeting for organization, and Feb. 19 another, when, with the highly esteemed Judge Arthur McArthur as president, and two prosecuting agents, the society began a work for the protection of animals which will last through the centuries, I hope. The papers had no objection to publishing what I said and did about animals, and with their very liberal reports my name was soon favorably known to some Congressmen who had been warned by the New-York circulars.

Possibly the adulteration crowd thought I had abandoned my attack, and would henceforth leave them to poison human beings, and devote my efforts to animals. If so, they were mistaken. I succeeded in securing, from the chairman of the House Committee on Manufactures, the appointment of another hearing on Jan. 13; but no quorum appeared, a majority staying away. On Jan. 20 I secured another; but, as before, a majority of the committee staid away, and there was no quorum. It was clearly useless to expect any action from *that committee*. I then went for the House Committee on *Agriculture*, but was soon satisfied that no quorum of that committee would ever give me a hearing: the lobbyists were too active.

THE YELLOW-FEVER COMMITTEE.

It so happened, that when I visited Washington, February, 1878, to endeavor to obtain from Congress better laws regulating transportation of animals, I met, very pleasantly, *Hon. Casey Young*, member of the House from Memphis, Tenn. It so happened, that through the great yellow-fever-epidemic of the following summer Mr. Young was one of the heroes who remained in Memphis to care for the sick and dying; and I had met him again at Washington in December, and talked with him about my plans of having a *national monument* "*to the heroes, living and dead, who, in 1878, fought yellow-fever.*" My meetings with Mr. Young had been very pleasant; and he was now chairman of a committee of the House, appointed for the purpose of fighting yellow-fever, called "*the Committee on Epidemic Diseases,*" and composed largely of Southern men, who were not afraid of the political influence of either glucose or oleomargarine. The New-York lobbyists had never suspected that I should bring the adulteration of foods before a committee on yellow-fever; and, even if they had found it out sooner, it is quite likely they would not have made much headway with that committee. To Casey Young I went, and laid the whole matter before him; and Casey Young declared that Congress and the country should have, through a report of his committee, the evidence I wanted to submit. By his direction, I wrote the following petition to Congress:—

PETITION TO CONGRESS.

To the Honorable Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled:

The petition of George T. Angell of Boston, in the State of Massachusetts, counsellor-at-law, respectfully represents, *That*, during the past five years, he has devoted much time to the careful investigation of the manufacture and sale of poisonous and adulterated foods, and other poisonous and dangerously adulterated articles, in American markets, and has gathered a very large amount of evidence showing such manufacture and sale: that he has, at different times, read three papers upon this subject before the American Social Science Association, of which he is a director, at its annual meetings, and more recently a fourth paper before the Boston Board of Trade, receiving a unanimous vote of thanks from that body; that he is fully prepared to prove that there is, at the present time, an enormous sale, in our markets, of articles poisonously and dangerously adulterated, endangering the lives and health of large numbers of the American people. Wherefore, he prays that a Congressional committee, or commission, may be appointed to carefully investigate, consider, and report on this subject.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

WASHINGTON, Jan 22, 1881.

This petition Mr. Young presented in the House of Representatives, and had referred to his committee. Down came the man from New York who had tried to suppress my paper at Saratoga, and there was plenty of lobbying and wire-pulling. But the yellow-fever committee, with Casey Young at its head, was bomb-proof. I appeared before the committee on Jan. 27, Jan. 28, and Feb. 3; at which time they voted to report in my favor a bill prepared by Mr. Young, appointing a commission, and appropriating twenty thousand dollars to carry it out.

SOLID GROUND.

On Feb. 4 Mr. Young presented his report in the House, *with about a hundred manuscript pages of evidence, furnished by me, annexed*; all of which was ordered to be printed, and my mission to Washington was at last on solid ground. I had not been idle, however, in other directions.

THE REVEREND CLERGY.

On Jan. 24 I addressed the Monday-morning meeting of the Washington clergy, on *protection of animals*, and secured an invitation to address them the next Monday morning, Jan. 31, on the growth of crime in general, and *particularly of crimes against public health*.

At the close of this address I was at once invited to occupy three pulpits in different parts of the city, on successive Sunday evenings, Feb. 6, 13, and 20, with the same lecture. Feb. 6 was in the Rev. Dr. Butler's Memorial Church, where I had previously lectured on

animals. It was a union-meeting; and the reverend doctor, who had been chaplain of the Senate, sent a personal invitation to every member of Congress to be present. It was a large audience, and had a good effect to offset the New-York circulars, whose principal distributor occupied a front seat.

CIRCULATE THE REPORT.

The next thing was to circulate the Congressional report and evidence, and I determined it should be done thoroughly. For weeks, both my good wife and I were constantly occupied in directing and mailing copies to all parts of the country, and to foreign countries. Congress printed about a thousand copies. I printed, at my own expense, five thousand more; also about as many more copies of an appendix.

We sent them *to members of Congress, to nearly all the leading newspapers of the country, to the hundreds of medical gentlemen all over the country belonging to the "American Public Health Association," to the other hundreds belonging to the "American Social Science Association," to chemists, microscopists, and scientific men, to granges, to foreign ministers and consuls, in fact, to everybody that, during several weeks, we could think of, who might have influence; and then I made an arrangement with a Washington gentleman, by which more than a hundred thousand copies of most of the report were distributed generally through the country. Then I thought my winter's work done; and having lectured on animals at Wilmington, Del., stopping with my good friend the late respected Edward Bringham, I returned to Boston April 30. On Sunday, May 29, I addressed two Sunday schools, and lectured to a union meeting of several leading churches, in Poughkeepsie, N.Y.*

On June 14 I was before our railroad-commissioners, at a hearing on the overloading of horse-cars.

PRESIDENT GARFIELD SHOT.

On Saturday, July 2, President Garfield was shot. Sunday, the 3d, I was at home, thirteen miles out of Boston. Monday, the 4th, I also remained at home. The weather was intensely hot. I thought a great deal about the President, whom I had pleasantly met at Washington, and wondered whether they were keeping him cool. Tuesday, the 5th, as I took the cars for Boston, I got a daily paper, and found to my astonishment, that, while the President was suffering terribly with heat, no measures had been taken to cool the

atmosphere of his room. The moment I reached the city, I hurried to telegraphic headquarters, on State Street, and had the following telegram sent in precedence of all others:—

J. STANLEY BROWN, *President's Private Secretary, Washington.*

Cool President's room with long strips of cotton or flannel cloth hung across and over it, soaked in ice-water.

GEORGE T. ANGELL, Boston.

I then went at once to Mr. Pulsifer, of the "Boston Herald," told him what I had done, and asked him to send a similar telegram. I had the pleasure of reading in the papers of July 7, that the President's room was now cooled by cloths soaked in ice-water.

TEN LESSONS ON KINDNESS TO ANIMALS.

From the making of my will in 1864, before referred to, I had always held the doctrine that a *thousand times more could be done to prevent cruelty by humane education* than by any other means, and that the important time to begin is in early childhood. I had never seen any publications which satisfied my ideas of what should be put into the hands of children to both interest and instruct. If there were any such in the world, I had not seen them; and I determined to try my hand. So I called upon Mr. William E. Sheldon of Boston, editor of "The Primary Teacher," a publication going to some twenty-five thousand teachers, and the only publication of just its kind in the world, and arranged with him to write gratuitously for his publication "*Ten Lessons on Kindness to Animals*," to the preparation of which I would, with proper materials, give my summer vacation.

At the same quiet spot in the mountains of New Hampshire where I had gone the year before, I gave, with the exception of three or four lectures, the entire vacation to this subject.

It gives me happiness to know that these lessons have not only gone to about twenty-five thousand primary teachers through this publication, but have been reprinted to greater or less extent, not only in all our American and some European humane journals, but also in a great variety of educational and other papers in this country, England, and on the Continent. I printed five thousand copies at my own expense, and presented them to our Massachusetts society with the electrotype-plates, from which other editions are now printed as called for.

BOSTON CLERGY ON ADULTERATION.

On Sept. 12 I addressed "The Evangelical Alliance," several hun-

dreds of the clergy of Boston and vicinity, on adulterations, and had copies of the Congressional report distributed.

AMERICAN HUMANE ASSOCIATION.

On Oct. 19 I gave an address before "The American Humane Association," at Tremont Temple; and, Oct. 20, presided and gave another address at the festival of the same association, in Horticultural Hall, at which several hundred gentlemen and ladies were present, — *the first festival of its kind in America.*

VIVISECTION.

On Oct. 26 a letter, written by me the day previous, appeared in six Boston daily papers, asking those who would like to form a society *to limit vivisection, and give money to support it*, to send me their names. Some twenty, or thereabouts, responded, but not enough to warrant its formation. It answered a part of my purpose in calling public attention to the subject.

MORAL AND HUMANE EDUCATION SOCIETY.

Oct. 28 and Nov. 19 I had interviews with various prominent educational gentlemen in regard to forming a *Moral and Humane Education Society*, similar to the one I aided in forming at Minneapolis; and on Dec. 9 I read before the council of the "American Social Science Association" an essay on the same subject, reported in the daily papers of Dec. 10.

BOSTON GROCERS.

On Nov. 14 I again addressed "The Evangelical Alliance" on adulteration, and offered resolutions, which they referred, at my request, to a committee; and on Nov. 29 I drew, *by request of leading grocers of Boston*, a form for petition to the Legislature, to enact more stringent laws against adulteration.

1882.

CLERGY, GROCERS, AND LAW.

On Jan. 9 the evangelical ministers of Boston and vicinity unanimously passed the resolutions I had submitted, and which had been widely published by the Boston press, calling upon our Legislature to enact stringent laws to prevent the manufacture and sale of danger-

ously adulterated articles. *In February one hundred and thirty-four petitions* of the form I had drawn, signed by thousands of most respectable grocers and their customers through the State, praying for laws to punish and prevent adulteration, were presented to the Legislature; and a bill was introduced for that purpose.

I sent my Congressional report to every member, wrote letters which appeared in various Boston daily papers, talked with people, and aided in every way in my power. It was fought at every point, but after various delays passed the House, and came to its third and last consideration in the Senate; when on Friday, May 19, just at the close of the session, by a piece of legerdemain, its passage was prevented, and, unless reconsidered at the next Monday's session, would be lost. I immediately wrote letters to our editors, which appeared in Saturday, Sunday, and Monday morning's papers; and on Monday I passed a considerable portion of the day at the State House.

The bill was reconsidered, and became the law of Massachusetts; and it is now a source of much gratification to me to see the stringent laws which are being enacted in many of the States to remedy this great evil. Messrs. Charles E. Moody and H. E. Cobb of Boston, prominent grocers, rendered great service in passing our Massachusetts law. During the winter and spring I had another fight for dogs at the State House, which resulted in our favor. I wrote considerable for the papers, gave various lectures, an address before the Connecticut Humane Society's annual meeting at Hartford, and *became a life-member of the "Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children."*

A NARROW ESCAPE FOR LIFE.

On Feb. 24 I came very near losing my life. On my way to the State House, a block of ice weighing about ten pounds fell from a five-story building on Park Street, and struck me a glancing blow which knocked me down instantly, and from the effects of which I did not recover for several weeks. A variation of a few inches would have killed me. I wrote through the various papers a caution to property-owners to be more careful of their roofs. The next winter a lady was struck by another block of ice, within a hundred feet of where I was standing, and killed instantly. I then wrote again. On Sunday, March 26, by invitation of the Maine Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, through Hon. Charles McLaughlin, its president, I lectured on the relations of animals, etc., at Portland, Me., before a union meeting of *five* large churches, — *Episcopal, Swedenborgian, Unitarian, and two Congregational.*

On June 30, on invitation of Nathan Appleton, Esq., I visited Newport, R.I., to aid in organizing a society there.

“OUR DUMB ANIMALS” AND AMERICAN BAND OF MERCY.

On June 1, our secretary having resigned, and it being necessary to supply his place with an inexperienced man, I concluded to confine myself more closely to our Massachusetts Society, and to resume the editorial management of “*Our Dumb Animals*.” At the May directors’ meeting I proposed, and the directors voted, a *committee on “humane education.”* At the meeting of that committee on June 7, I proposed, and the committee voted, *to prepare a pledge and card for children in the schools.*

REV. THOMAS TIMMINS.

I had just got ready to begin a campaign of humane education, when, on July 8, just one month and one day from our vote, I was introduced by my friend Chief-Justice Parmenter to the *Rev. Thomas Timmins* of Portsmouth, Eng., who had been connected with an English “Band of Mercy,” and who was, of all men in the world, just *the man* needed to help carry out the work. If our meeting just at that time was not providential, it was certainly wonderful, and in the light of results will, I am sure, by many who have read Mr. *Timmins’s* interesting history of it, be deemed providential. We immediately began work, *determined to found a great order of mercy*, which should reach, not only through the State, but over the continent, and as much farther as God willed. During twenty days we laid its foundations, most carefully considering and discussing every point.

It should take the English name “Band of Mercy,” with the prefix of “American.” In all other respects it should be entirely different from any thing that had preceded it. It should include “all harmless living creatures,” both human and dumb. It should have its own pledge, badge, and card of membership.

Those who have read Mr. Timmins’s history before referred to will know how we labored, and thought, and studied every point before we finally decided, and how at last we finished with the perfection of that beautiful five-pointed-star badge on which is engraved “*Glory to God,*” “*Peace on Earth,*” “*Good will to All,*” “*Kindness to all harmless living creatures.*”

THE FIRST BAND.

The formation in my office of the *first* “American Band of Mercy,” Mr. Timmins has well described in his history before referred to, as follows:—

"It was a proud day to us both, July 28, 1882, and one of great thankfulness, when, all being ready, we asked Mr. Angell that we might consecrate and begin the 'American Band of Mercy' with prayer. To see him enter into the spirit of it, was an inspiration. His prompt stationing an officer, that there might be no interruption; the inviting-in the other officers of the Massachusetts Society; and the bringing-in the cards of membership, and laying them on the table, — we shall never forget the scene. Then, in a few words of thankfulness to Almighty God for his goodness in leading us to this work, of keeping up so far our weak health and strength, and that he would grant his grace and the spirit of Christ in further work, we went down on our knees, and poured out our souls to him, beseeching him in the spirit of faith to bless the work and all who should join to the end of time to the well-being and happiness of his creatures human and dumb, until cruelty should be unknown, and kindness and love forever prevail."

I called two meetings of the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, as required to change the constitution, so that every person receiving a membership card of our "Band of Mercy" should thereby become also a "Band of Mercy" member of the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals.

THE GOVERNOR, MAYOR, CHIEF-JUSTICE, ETC.

Then I called personally upon the Governor of Massachusetts, the Mayor of Boston, the Roman-Catholic Archbishop, President Chadbourne, Hon. T. W. Bicknell, George Noyes, Esq., and made them all members. Then I wrote Chief-Justice Morton of our Supreme Court, Wendell Phillips, and other distinguished men, and made them members; then I went the rounds of the editors of our religious and educational papers, and made them members; then I gave Mr. Timmins introductions by letters, and otherwise; then we both went to work right and left, and have kept at work ever since, with voices and pens, Sundays and week-days, in season and out of season, with all the powers God has given us, until now, *August, 1884, a little over two years from its formation, we count three thousand four hundred and three organizations, with over two hundred and thirty-four thousand members.* In this work I have written thousands of letters, many articles for educational and other papers, the editorials of "Our Dumb Animals," appeals to clergy, teachers, and citizens, of which many thousands have been circulated; have addressed teachers, schools, and many other audiences, and formed personally some "Bands of Mercy:" but the great outside work in churches and schools has been done by Mr. Timmins, who, with the zeal of an apostle and the faith of a prophet, has with the aid of our friends in various places addressed and won to the cause of mercy probably

not less than one hundred and fifty thousand of the over two hundred and thirty-four thousand members we now number.

NOTABLE INCIDENTS.

Among the incidents of 1882 that I remember with particular interest, were my forming, with the aid of Father Patrick Strain, the *first Roman-Catholic "Band of Mercy" in America, and perhaps in the world*, in the parochial schools of Lynn, Mass., and another band in the high school at Moorhead, Minn.; my addresses before the Massachusetts State Board of Education, the annual meeting of the Massachusetts State Teachers' Association, and the New-England assembly of teachers; also my lectures by invitation of the Madison, Wis., Society, in the State House, to one of the finest audiences that could be gathered in that State; and at Jamestown, Dak., on Sunday evening, Oct. 22, to a union-meeting of churches; and my address to the children in Chicago on Oct. 30.

FOX-HUNT.

In September a fox-hunt, for sport and on wagers, was widely advertised to take place on an island in Boston Harbor. I notified the public, through the papers, that I should prosecute all engaged in it, and called upon the police commissioners for aid. They furnished a force of police and detectives, and the fox-hunt was stopped.

MOUNT AUBURN.

From overwork, I was in poor health during the summer, and the feeling that life was uncertain led me to do what I had hitherto neglected; namely, purchase a lot in Mount-Auburn Cemetery for myself and family, in which I directed that Rev. Mr. Timmins, in case of death in this country, and his wife, should have burial.

1883.

The growth of the "Bands of Mercy" this year, from *ninety-three* organizations, with about ten thousand members, to *over six hundred*, with over seventy thousand members, involved, on my part, the writing of about two thousand letters, also the preparation and circulation of a large amount of carefully prepared information. In addition to this and my ordinary editorial and other duties as president of the Massachusetts Society, which were not small, I wrote a variety of articles for various educational and other papers in Massa-

chusetts, Pennsylvania, and New York, and delivered a considerable number of addresses and lectures. Among the latter, the principal were before the *teachers of the city of Cambridge, March 28*, which resulted in forming some thirty Bands of Mercy; before a union-meeting of several churches in the city of Malden, Mass., on April 5; at Portsmouth, N.H., on June 8; in the Methodist-Episcopal Church at Newton, Sunday, Sept. 9; before two large meetings of the Roman-Catholic and Protestant children of the city of Gloucester, Mass., Oct. 14; and before the *National Education Association* at Boston, Nov. 3.

PROTECTION FROM FIRE.

About Jan. 12 occurred the burning of a large hotel, the Newhall House, at Milwaukee, Wis., with great loss of life, there being no escape from upper stories except by windows. This led me to present, in the "Boston Daily Advertiser" of Jan. 13, a plan somewhat similar to that used in saving from wrecked vessels; viz., to hurl stones or iron balls, attached to small strings, into upper windows; with these, draw up larger; and with these, ropes, and belts with metallic rings, which would enable persons to slide down a safe incline to the end held at some distance. In this article, I called the attention of our firemen, and suggested they should try to find something better if possible. It attracted considerable attention, resulted in some correspondence, and, I believe, did good.

On Jan. 29 I petitioned the Legislature for a law making it the duty of all teachers of public schools in the State to instruct their pupils to protect insect-eating birds and their nests, and treat animals kindly.

On Feb. 14, with Hon. Charles L. Flint, president of the Boston School Board, and Hon. Thomas W. Bicknell, I addressed the committee on the subject; but the law failed to pass, and must be tried again.

A law to encourage the killing of English sparrows came before the Legislature about this time, which I thought it, on the whole, a duty to oppose through the daily papers and elsewhere. The article and evidence then prepared and printed by me have been widely called for and used in other States.

Feb. 5 and 6 we had a battle at the State House with our combined horse-railroads, in regard to putting salt on their tracks to melt snow. We did this in response to a general public demand; but were defeated, *as we expected to be*, by the political and financial influence of these powerful corporations.

The fall of a flag-staff, fifty feet long and about a foot and a half

thick, from a high building into Washington Street, on May 29, led me to again call the attention of our city authorities, through the daily papers, to the importance of a more careful inspection of roofs and projections of buildings.

IMPURE WATER.

The death of a neighbor of mine, on Aug. 30, from drinking impure water, led me to call public attention, through the daily papers, to the *importance of never drinking doubtful water until it had been boiled to kill any dangerous germs it might contain.*

AMERICAN TEACHERS' BANDS OF MERCY.

But probably my most important work this year was arranging with Hon. T. W. Bicknell, president of the "National Education Association," and publisher and editor of the "American Teacher," to form "*American Teachers' Bands of Mercy.*" This has led to the formation, at this writing (August, 1884), of over three hundred of these organizations in public schools of a large proportion of the United States.

THE HAPPIEST DAY.

About the happiest day of the year was our "*Band-of-Mercy*" day, at the immense hall of our Foreign Exhibition, at the Mechanics' Institute Building, when the masses of children, accompanied by organ and full band, sang the "*Band-of-Mercy*" hymns composed by Rev. Mr. Timmins.

On Nov. 8 of this year, I was presented by Dr. Dio Lewis of New York with a hundred copies of his beautiful November monthly, containing my photograph and a sketch of my life; and, on Dec. 27, received from Hon. Thomas E. Hill of Chicago a very costly copy of "*Hill's Album of Biography,*" containing another photograph and a shorter sketch.

1884.

In the first six months of this year, up to this writing, the growth of the "Bands of Mercy" has been simply wonderful. In January, 1884, "Our Dumb Animals," we reported six hundred and eight bands, with over seventy thousand members. *In August, seven months later, we have three thousand four hundred and three bands, with over two hundred and thirty-four thousand members.* Between three and four hundred of these new bands were made through my personal correspondence, and a few by me personally; most of the

rest by the indefatigable and successful efforts of Rev. Mr. Timmins, who went to Cincinnati about the 1st of January, and, with the aid of friends there, formed over five hundred bands, mostly in the public schools.

He went to Chicago the last of March, and, with the aid of friends there, formed over a thousand, mostly in the public schools. He went to Rochester, N.Y., in June, and formed nearly two hundred there, mostly in public schools.

CROWDED STREETS.

On Jan. 3 an article appeared in the "Boston Herald," on the delays of travel in our narrow and most crowded streets, because of the great increase of horse-cars. I wrote in the "Herald" of Jan. 4 two remedies, namely: 1st, *Compel horse-cars to run through crowded thoroughfares on chain cable, as in Chicago and San Francisco.* 2d, *Cut sidewalks into and under the buildings on the street level, and let the present sidewalks be thrown into the streets, thus adding twenty feet or so to their present width. If I am not mistaken, both these plans will be adopted within the next ten years.*

A few days later, another attack on dogs was begun at the State House, by two orders referred to the Committee on Agriculture: 1st, That every dog-owner in the Commonwealth be required to give a bond of five hundred dollars, with sureties to pay all damage done by his dog; and, 2d, That dogs be restrained to the owner's premises in the same manner as horses, cattle, etc.

Through our various Boston papers, I at once notified dog-owners, and requested of the chairman of the committee a public hearing, which resulted successfully, while I was at Washington, under the management of my friend, Samuel E. Sawyer, Esq., who was acting during my absence as president *pro tem*.

PHILADELPHIA POLICE.

On Jan. 18, by invitation of the "Ladies' Pennsylvania Society," Mrs. Caroline E. White president, I addressed, in one of the beautiful halls of Philadelphia, the police of that city. A splendid audience of eight hundred stalwart men, and thirty-two officers, all in their best uniforms, with badges, belts, clubs, and perhaps revolvers in their pockets, marched in to listen to an address on kindness to animals, and receive gold medals presented by the society to those who during the year had rendered it the greatest service. *So far as my knowledge goes, this was the first audience of the kind ever addressed on this subject in the world.*

WASHINGTON SCHOOL COMMITTEE.

From Philadelphia I went, by invitation of the Washington Society, to that city, and gave on two successive Sundays, in three churches, as many different lectures to large audiences. The last, by unanimous vote of the school-committee of the city, whom I addressed on Jan. 23, all the teachers of white and colored schools of the city were invited to attend. I also, during the week, gave addresses to the students of *Howard University* and *Wayland Seminary*, and in "*All Souls' Church*;" forming in each a "Band of Mercy." It is a great pleasure to me to know that the school-committee of Washington, since my visit, have voted that *half a day of each month shall be devoted to teaching the children in Washington schools "kindness to animals;" the first instance of the kind, I think, in America.*

On Feb. 2, 3, and 4, I called public attention, through our daily papers, to the importance of greater care in watering horses in cold weather, when our drinking-fountains are closed. On Feb. 9 I received Dio Lewis's February "*New-York Monthly*," containing a carefully written article on adulteration, which I had previously sent him. This was widely copied and referred to in other publications.

NATIONAL MEETING OF SCHOOL-SUPERINTENDENTS.

On Feb. 10 I sent, through Hon. T. W. Bicknell, to the "*National Meeting of School-Superintendents*" at Washington, a long paper on the "*New Order of Chivalry*," which, by vote of the association, was published, and sent to all school-superintendents in the United States.

On March 4 I was before the Judiciary Committee of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, to oppose petitions that fines, in cases prosecuted for abuse of animals, should be paid to the State instead of our society. Various parties advocated this change, but the committee were unanimously in our favor. March 7 I received from Hon. B. L. Butcher, State superintendent of public schools of West Virginia, with whom I had been corresponding, a package of February numbers of the "*West Virginia School Journal*," edited by him, almost filled with articles advocating the establishment in all schools of "*Bands of Mercy*."

On May 29 I addressed, by invitation of the head master, about eight hundred of the older boys, and some two hundred invited guests, at the Dudley School, Boston Highlands.

THREE THOUSAND BOSTON DRIVERS.

On the evening of June 16 I addressed about three thousand Boston drivers of teams, hacks, and carriages, at the Boston Theatre, and presented, on behalf of our society, a gold medal to Professor Bartholomew, who gave a free exhibition of his wonderfully trained horses. The medal was a heavy, solid gold, five-pointed star of the "Band of Mercy," hung by a gold ring from a heavy gold shield. This medal was paid for by Col. Henry S. Russell, owner of the world-renowned horse *Smuggler*, and formerly chairman of our Boston Police Commissioners, who had greatly aided in securing this free entertainment.

[Continuation of Autobiographical Sketches of Geo. T. Angell, from the volume printed in 1884.]

1884 (continued).

The first printed volume of my autobiographical sketches ended with an address to some three thousand Boston drivers of horses, on June 16th, 1884. I now, at request of friends, continue the volume to January 1, 1892.

During this time I have, as heretofore since 1882,—excepting the winter of 1884–5, when I was at work in New Orleans and Florida,—taken the entire personal direction and responsibility of our home work, which in its various departments has been growing every year, and extending, not only through our own State, but largely throughout the entire country.

The numerous plans I have submitted, and by vote of our directors carried out,—the numerous hearings I have had before our State Legislature and elsewhere,—the numerous articles I have, at various times, written for the press,—will mostly appear from a careful examination of "*Our Dumb Animals*," but are too lengthy for this volume.

Among the work which seems to me most notable I put the following:—

On August 21st, 1884, I gave an address before the Connecticut Peace Society.

On December 3d I went, with Mrs. Angell, to New Orleans, as superintendent of the "*Humane Department*" of "*The World's International Exposition*," and to aid in extending our work in the Southern States, taking with me for distribution about *forty thousand copies of humane publications*, contributed principally by the Massachusetts Society and myself. The last of the month I learned that grounds had been prepared, adjoining those of the Exposition, and buildings erected upon them for a series of bull-fights, and that the Mexican bull-fighters with their bulls had arrived in the city, and were about to begin. I immediately wrote the three leading papers of New Orleans, protesting against the proposed exhibitions. My letters appeared in the "*Picayune*," "*Times-Democrat*," and "*States*," of December 31st, with editorials sustaining me, and a few days later the Governor of Louisiana gave orders to have the bull-fights prevented, and the bull-fighters and their bulls were compelled to return to Mexico. I was warned that this was a somewhat dangerous thing to do, but no harm resulted.

1885.

During the months of January, February, and March, up to March 20th, I remained at New Orleans, attending daily to my duties at the Exposition, distributing personally, and through my assistant, about forty thousand copies of humane publications, — giving numerous lectures and addresses before universities, schools, and New Orleans teachers, and other audiences, also talking about our work with and to several thousands of people from various parts of our own and other countries, who visited the Exposition, and, in the meantime, writing various articles for the New Orleans papers in relation to it. I had the pleasure of aiding in forming "*Bands of Mercy*" in many of the schools, and of helping to organize at the St. Charles Hotel, on March 18th, the "*Louisiana Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*." On February 26th I read a paper on the importance of humane education in schools before the "*International Congress of Educators*," then in session in New Orleans. This paper has since been published and widely circulated by the United States Bureau of Education at Washington, and republished in various papers in different parts of the country.

In all my New Orleans work I received much assistance from Mr. and Mrs. Geo. Nicholson, proprietors of the New Orleans "*Picayune*," whose house was our home until we obtained permanent accommodations.

On March 21st I arrived at Jacksonville, Florida. On the 24th I called on the various city editors, and on the 25th it was announced in all the daily papers that I was there to help form societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals, there being in that State no society and no law to protect animals from cruelty. I remained in Florida until April 25th.

At Jacksonville I gave lectures and addresses in three churches, Library Hall, and various schools. I wrote various articles for the press, talked with many leading citizens, and, with the earnest aid of Miss Sarah B. Hills, of New York City, had the pleasure of helping organize, at Jacksonville, the "*Florida State Society P. C. Animals*," and "*Bands of Mercy*" in all the principal schools. At St. Augustine I gave two addresses in one of the churches and helped organize the "*St. Augustine Society P. C. A.*" On my return to Boston I resumed the editorial management of "*Our Dumb Animals*," which had been well conducted by Secretary Stevens during my absence.

On September 9th the school committee of Boston, by unanimous vote, granted my petition to address every public school in Boston one hour on "*the importance of treating the lower animals kindly.*"

Considering that no outside person had ever before been permitted to address the Boston public schools in this manner upon any subject, and that there was no precedent, so far as I am aware, in the world for granting permission to address on this subject, and that the vote in a somewhat combative body passed unanimously, I thought it about as good evidence as could possibly have been given of the popularity of our work.

October 12th I began my Boston school addresses, beginning with the Normal, Latin, and High, taking one school a day, and giving each one hour, and continued through the year, addressing before the close of the year about nineteen thousand teachers and pupils, and giving to each of the about nine hundred teachers seven of our best publications.

On Sunday, October 18th, I addressed a union meeting of churches at Manchester, New Hampshire, which completely filled the large hall, with many standing.

On November 9th I sent to the annual meeting of "The American Humane Association," at St. Louis, Mo., a paper entitled "*The Power of the Public Schools,*" which was widely published.

1886.

During January, February, March, April, May, and to June 23d, I continued my one hour addresses before the Boston schools, the whole occupying me some hours of sixty-one days. I also wrote various articles relating to our work, some of which appeared, I believe, in all Boston daily papers.

On Sunday, January 17th, I addressed a union meeting of churches in the City Hall, Dover, New Hampshire. About fifteen hundred were present, and as many more, it was estimated, failed to get in. I also brought before the Massachusetts Legislature a petition from our Society for a law making it the duty of all teachers of public schools in the State to teach kindness to the lower animals. In aid of this petition I addressed the Episcopal, Congregationalist, Unitarian, and Baptist, and by letters the Methodist and Universalist clergy, and obtained from all resolutions and petitions asking the Legislature to enact the law. I also addressed the "Massachusetts Horticultural Society," and the Boston weekly meeting of farmers,

obtaining similar resolutions. I obtained letters to the same effect from our Roman Catholic Archbishop Williams and various prominent citizens, and had several hearings at the State House, the result being a letter from the Secretary of our State Board of Education to every public school teacher in the State, informing them *that the laws of Massachusetts made it their duty to teach kindness to the lower animals.*

The exposures incident to my sixty-one days' addresses to the Boston public schools brought on bronchitis, which resulted in spasmodic asthma, with which I have suffered ever since.

Hoping for relief, from July 19th to October 7th I took a trip to Dakota, giving, on my way, an address at Duluth. At Fargo (where I had the pleasure of helping form the "North Dakota Humane Society") I addressed a union meeting of churches, Sunday and the High and Grammar schools. I also addressed the schools at Valley City, a union meeting of churches at Jamestown on Sunday, and a meeting of citizens at Grand Rapids.

In Minneapolis, on my return, I addressed the High School, the faculty and students of the Minnesota State University, the Minnesota Congregational Club, and a large audience Sunday evening in the Church of the Redeemer. At Ann Arbor, Michigan, I addressed, Sunday evening, a large audience of university students and others. In November I had our Society petition Congress for a law to protect dumb animals from cruelty in United States Territories, and through General Collins, M. C. from Boston, presented a bill for a law which the Judiciary Committee unanimously reported for enactment. In November and December I wrote various articles upon our humane work for the "*Swiss Cross*" and other papers, and caused about seventy thousand copies of our humane publications to be sent to all clergy, lawyers, school committees, superintendents, and teachers of public schools in Massachusetts. I also succeeded in getting 643 of the Boston police to become branch members of our society. During the summer I caused about eight thousand copies of our publications to be sent to the National Convention of Teachers at Topeka, Kansas; about four thousand to the National Convention of Teachers at Bar Harbor, Maine; and one thousand to the Teachers' Territorial Convention at Valley City, Dakota.

During the year, as heretofore (except while on my Western trip), I edited "*Our Dumb Animals*," and, by correspondence, aided in forming several hundreds of new "*Bands of Mercy*" in the various

States and Territories. In some of my letters which appeared this year in Boston daily papers, the following subjects were treated: *check-reins, docking, sparrows, keeping blankets on horses cold days, strikes, the Indians.*

1887.

In January I prepared with great care eight humane leaflets, containing one hundred carefully selected stories, poems, etc. About sixty thousand of these, by unanimous vote of the Boston School Committee, were gratuitously distributed in the Boston public schools, and several hundreds of thousands have been distributed elsewhere.

In February I prepared an eight-page pamphlet entitled "*Condensed Information*," telling how to form societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals and "*Bands of Mercy*," what to do and how to do it, etc., etc. About twenty thousand copies of this pamphlet have been distributed during the year.

During the summer I was corresponding with Frances E. Willard, president and the leader of the "*Woman's Christian Temperance Union*," to endeavor to have them adopt in all their juvenile temperance organizations in the United States our "*Bands of Mercy*." I was invited to address their National Convention, at Nashville, Tennessee, but, finding I could not go, sent to the convention four thousand copies of the address I had prepared, and various other humane publications. The convention advised that "*Bands of Mercy*" be formed in all their juvenile organizations, and many have been already formed. I also petitioned the convention to have stricken out of temperance school books all suggestions of experiments on living animals. *It was decided that in future editions all such suggestions should be omitted.*

During the entire year I edited "*Our Dumb Animals*," corresponded with various eminent writers and speakers, and thousands of persons interested in forming "*Bands of Mercy*" and other societies and humane work.

In July I caused a hundred and ten thousand copies of our humane publications to be distributed at the great "National Teachers' Convention" at Chicago, and about twelve thousand at the smaller "National Convention" at Burlington, Vermont. I also caused "*Our Dumb Animals*" to be sent during a considerable portion of the year to upwards of five thousand editors, including all in Southern States and all west of the Mississippi River. also occasionally to all Massachusetts clergy (Protestant and Roman

Catholic) and all Massachusetts lawyers, teachers, school committees, etc., and caused bound volumes of "*Our Dumb Animals*" to be placed in the reading-rooms of leading mountain, seashore, and other hotels, also on steamboats, also in libraries and other reading-rooms.

I gave quite a number of addresses during the year, before Boston and Newton schools, and, through the influence of Miss Sarah J. Eddy, of Providence, R. I., before the Providence High School and a union meeting of the higher classes of all the Providence Grammar Schools, in the Opera House, — also before temperance organizations, — the "Boston Coachmen's Association," — the State Convention of the "Woman's Christian Temperance Union," — the "Boston Primary Sunday School Teachers' Association," — a large Boston convention of about two thousand clergymen and Sunday-school workers, and several others.

I have written during the year considerably for the press, and given, as in past years, my time, thoughts, and labor to our humane work both in and outside the State.

The various plans adopted are too numerous for this volume, but are found mostly in "*Our Dumb Animals*."

1888.

In addition to my customary duties as president, and editing "*Our Dumb Animals*," and corresponding with the "*Bands of Mercy*" (new and old) and other societies and correspondents, I have, during this year, sent out over the country several hundreds of thousands of copies of our humane publications, — arranged with "*The American Teacher*" to send them to about forty thousand teachers, and with the "*Golden Rule*" to send them to all the "Societies of Christian Endeavor." I have also offered to all college students in the United States a prize of one hundred dollars for the best essay on "*The Effect of Humane Education on the Prevention of Crime*," — written all college presidents on the subject, and sent bound volumes of our publications to all college libraries, and some seventy thousand copies of four large printed pages of "Condensed Information" to college students; also put all college papers and libraries, and many editors, reporters, and writers on the free list of "*Our Dumb Animals*." During a large portion of the year I have sent "*Our Dumb Animals*" to from seventy-five hundred to eight thousand editors, including all in the Southern States and west of the Mississippi River, — also to Massachusetts clergy and lawyers, and a part of the time to Massa-

chusetts doctors, and have sent bound volumes to the Boston public schools and to many libraries and reading-rooms.

I have had over six hundred of the Boston police again made branch members of our Massachusetts Society P. C. A., caused members of the "*Coachmen's Benevolent Association*" to be supplied with our papers without charge. erected the Dorothea L. Dix fountain in Custom-house Square, arranged to have thirty-six of our Boston fountains kept running all winter, had several hearings at the State House in relation to improved laws against glanders and dog and cock fighting, contracted for the construction of an ambulance for removing disabled animals, taken measures to secure the blanketing of horses in our streets on cold days, assisted "*The Woman's Christian Temperance Union*" in preparing lessons on kindness for their juvenile organizations, and written various articles for the press on "Saving Life in Blizzards," and other humane matters. All these have involved my receiving and answering, personally or otherwise, several thousands of letters. During the year I have aided in forming over five hundred new "*Bands of Mercy*."

1889.

In addition to usual duties as President, and as editor of "*Our Dumb Animals*," I have, during this year —

(1.) Obtained the ambulance contracted for last year, and which was paid for by Mrs. Wm. Appleton, of Boston.

(2.) Erected *in memory of Mrs. Ellen M. Gifford* another drinking fountain for animals, similar to that erected by the Society last year in Custom-house Square, at which, on one of the coldest days of last winter, five hundred and eighty-three horses drank.

(3.) Obtained from the Massachusetts Legislature *the first special law in the world to punish the torture of horses by docking*.

(4.) Obtained from the Massachusetts Legislature power for "*The Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*" to hold for the future protection of animals a largely increased amount of property free from taxation, viz., half a million dollars.

(5.) Obtained a unanimous vote of the Boston School Committee authorizing us to offer to the public schools of Boston prizes for the encouragement of kindness. *For this was subsequently substituted the having some thirty-six thousand compositions written.*

(6.) Obtained the kind approval of the Most Reverend Arch-

bishop to offer similar prizes to the pupils in all the schoolrooms of the Boston Roman Catholic schools.

(7.) Had a "*Band of Mercy*" formed, composed of Boston coachmen, numbering over four hundred and fifty members.

(8.) Aided in forming nearly one thousand new branches of our "*Parent Band of Mercy*" all over the United States and Territories, and in British North America, carrying the number formed to over seven thousand.

(9.) Offered in behalf of "*The American Humane Education Society*" to all American editors a prize of three hundred dollars for the best essay on "*The Effect of Humane Education on the Prevention of Crime*," and supplied them all with condensed information on this subject.

(10.) Sent humane literature to the thousands of teachers meeting in our great annual "National Teachers' Conventions."

(11.) Sent "*Our Dumb Animals*" a large portion of the year to the editors of *every newspaper and magazine on this continent north of Mexico*.

(12.) Offered prizes for the encouragement of kindness to one thousand schools and Sunday schools.

(13.) Offered "*Our Dumb Animals*" at one-half its cost to five thousand schools and Sunday schools in Massachusetts, and to ten thousand schools and Sunday schools outside the State.

(14.) Obtained from the Massachusetts Legislature the incorporation of our "*American Humane Education Society*," with power to hold half a million of dollars free from taxation, and enabling it to begin its great work with a live missionary at the West, and a payment in one month alone of five hundred dollars for humane literature sent out over the country.

To this Society I gave lands estimated to be worth about three thousand dollars.

These are some of the things which kind Providence has given me the power to accomplish during the past year, and for all of which I should be grateful.

1890.

The year 1890 has been a memorable one. First, because legacies to our "*Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*" have enabled me to largely increase the work of that Society.

In the beginning of the year I had perhaps the most severe of the many battles I have had at the State House, to prevent the

enactment of a law requiring all the dogs of the State to be muzzled, — the result being in our favor. Extra officers have been employed, — our monthly paper has been sent regularly to all the clergy, lawyers, and physicians of the State, and many thousands of copies to the annual meetings of the National and other teachers' conventions, — forty thousand copies of my lecture to the Boston public schools have been printed and widely circulated for use in public schools elsewhere, — twenty thousand copies of a check-rein card have been printed and widely circulated.

But more largely has it been memorable for work through our "*American Humane Education Society*," — the success of its two missionaries whom I have employed in organizing numerous humane societies and "*Bands of Mercy*" in Western States, — the very large amount of humane literature it has distributed, including the sending "*Our Dumb Animals*" each month to all the editors of America north of Mexico, — and the large increase of our "*Bands of Mercy*," now numbering over nine thousand bands. But principally has it been memorable for wonderful success in the publication and distribution of "*Black Beauty*," the best book ever written teaching kindness to the horse.

About the first of February I received from Miss Georgiana Kendall, of New York City, a copy of this book without comment. It had been in print in England about thirteen years, but I had never seen or heard of it. I read it through, and immediately called upon my printers for estimates of its cost, and upon our friends, through "*Our Dumb Animals*," for contributions to aid its circulation. The result cannot perhaps be better told than in the following, which constitutes the introductory chapter to all the editions since printed: —

THE "UNCLE TOM'S CABIN" OF THE HORSE.

For more than twenty years *this thought* has been upon my mind.

Somebody must write a book which shall be as widely read as "*Uncle Tom's Cabin*," and shall have as widespread and powerful influence in abolishing cruelty to horses as "*Uncle Tom's Cabin*"

had on the abolition of human slavery.

Many times, by letter and word of mouth, I have called the attention of American writers to this matter and asked them to undertake it.

At last the book has come to me — not from America, but from England, where already over ninety thousand copies have been sold.

It was written by a woman — Anna Sewell.

It is the autobiography of an English horse, telling of kind masters and cruel — of happiness and of suffering. *I am glad to say that happiness predominates and finally triumphs.*

I have read each of its *two hundred and thirty-eight beautifully printed pages, from its cheerful beginning to its happy end,* and then called in the printers.

Through the kind gifts of friends I am enabled to pay \$265 *for having it electrotyped,* and through the kindness of another friend am enabled to print a *first edition of ten thousand, at the marvellously low price of twelve cents each* — to which must be added, when sent by mail, *eight cents for postage, &c.*

As I have said, *over ninety thousand copies* have been already sold in England.

I want to print immediately *a hundred thousand copies* here.

I want the power *to give away thousands of these to drivers of horses* — and in public schools — and elsewhere.

I want to send a copy, post-paid, to the editors of each of about *thirteen thousand* American newspapers and magazines.

I would be glad to have each reader of this paper, *who has ever loved or cared for a horse,* send me as large a check as he or she can afford, to be used in the distribution of this book.

Every such check will be acknowledged in "*Our Dumb Animals*" and at once passed into the treasury of our "*American Humane Education Society,*" and be promptly used for the purpose for which it is sent.

I would be glad, if I had the means, to put a copy of it *in every home in America,* for I am sure there has never been a book printed in any language the reading of which will be more likely to inspire love and kind care for these dumb servants and friends who toil and die in our service. I hope to live long enough to print and distribute *a million copies.* It will be ready for delivery about the middle of March.

THE TITLE OF THE BOOK IS "BLACK BEAUTY, — HIS GROOMS AND COMPANIONS."

BOSTON, Feb. 12, 1890.

GEO. T. ANGELL,
President of the American Humane Education Society, the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the Parent American Band of Mercy, 19 Milk St., Boston.

As soon as it appeared I ordered some hundreds of copies sent to friends of our cause, and the result of my introductory chapter was soon seen in checks sent me by Mrs. Wm. Appleton and other good friends, and the following letter, which came in my morning's mail on "Fast Day:" —

CONCORD, MASS., April 2, 1890.

MY DEAR MR. ANGELL:

I wish to present to "*The American Humane Education Society*" five thousand dollars, in memory of my sister, Cordelia Kennedy Sada.

In doing this I give expression to her unstinted sympathy and admiration for your noble work—as well as my own. I enclose check for five thousand dollars.

Very sincerely yours,

LOUISE KENNEDY.

TO GEO. T. ANGELL, Esq.

Probably not less than a thousand American papers, including those of highest literary standing and largest circulation, have published articles in its praise.

I remember to have seen but one criticism, and to that I made the following answer:

BLACK BEAUTY ATTACKED.

We have received from a leading Boston paper a long attack on "*Black Beauty*."

The attack is that our "*American Humane Education Society*" sells this beautifully printed book of 260 pages for *one quarter of the price it ought to bring*, and that the *English author gets nothing*.

We answer:—

(1) The author died *unmarried* shortly after the publication of the book.

(2) Her mother, a *widow*, died soon after.

(3) The English publisher paid Miss Sewell *just twenty pounds* for the book. By the payment of *twenty pounds* it became his property, *and no one but the English publisher gets a sixpence from the profits*.

(4) He has already sold 103,000 copies in England.

(5) He will receive thousands of dollars from its increased sale in Great Britain, Upper and Lower Canada, and other British provinces, which he would not have received but for its immense advertisement and sale in this country.

(6) *We much regret that the English copyright and price limit its distribution and usefulness in Great Britain.*

(7) As there is no American copyright on this book, we must undersell every other publisher, or be undersold

and driven out of the market, and in place of what we publish concerning the objects and importance of our "*Humane Education Society*," will appear only the business advertisements of the publisher.

We have established here, on this American continent, "*The American Humane Education Society*"—the first Society of its kind in the world.

No Society in the world has been organized with greater care or more safeguards against the foolish expenditure of money.

It has been authorized by the Legislature of Massachusetts to hold half a million dollars *free from taxation*.

It wants to send its missionaries into every State and Territory.

It wants to form powerful "*Humane Societies*" in every State and Territory.

It wants to form half a million of its "*Bands of Mercy*" in American schools and Sunday schools, and supply them *gratuitously, or at bare cost*, with the choicest humane literature.

To do this it must attract the attention and approval of the American people.

To do this it wants to flood this whole country (1st) with "*Black Beauty*," and (2nd) with other publications of a similar kind.

To do this it must undersell—even at a loss of thousands of dollars—all

other publishers, *who would simply advertise their personal business.*

Cruelty in transportation of animals on the land, *by which hundreds of thousands die annually.*

Cruelty in transportation of animals on the ocean.

Cruelty in slaughter-houses, *where millions die annually with great and unnecessary suffering.*

Cruelty on the plains, *where hundreds of thousands die in winter, and sometimes in summer, of slow starvation.*

A thousand forms of cruelty to the horse, — *both in peace and war*, — and to other domestic animals.

Cruelty in the seal fisheries.

Cruelty to harmless and other wild animals.

Cruelty in the killing of hundreds of thousands of useful and harmless birds — *many of them mother birds with their nests full of young.*

Cruelty of unnecessary vivisection.

All these are but *fractions* of a great whole, which can be effectively reached by no law or power [short of the Almighty] *except by the power of humane education.*

Upon the success of "*The American Humane Education Society*" [the first of its kind in the world], and similar societies which may follow it, is to depend, not only the protection of the lower races, *but the elevation of the higher. — the substitution of ballots for bullets, — the prevention of crimes of violence, — the dawning of the Millennium.*

Under Divine Providence, the sending of this book, "*Black Beauty*," into every American home may be — as was the publication of "*Uncle Tom's Cabin*" — an important step in the progress, *not only of American, but the World's, humanity and civilization.*

GEO. T. ANGELL.

No better evidence can be given of the remarkable fascination of this book than that I have found it necessary to have five complete sets of type, that I have already printed *over two hundred and twenty-six thousand copies*, and am now having it translated into various foreign languages to be read by continental European nations, and those American and South American nations by whom those languages are spoken.

To obtain light, promote discussion, and lead to wise and humane action, I have offered in behalf of our "*American Humane Education Society*," prizes to the amount of five hundred dollars for the *best essays on vivisection*, and another five hundred dollars for the *most useful letters and essays in relation to cattle transportation, slaughtering, the treatment of cattle on our Western, Northwestern, and Southwestern plains, and the effects of cruelties to animals on public health.*

During this year I have probably received *over ten thousand letters*, and have devoted much time to editing, with great care, "*Our Dumb Animals*," and examining the many thousands of exchange papers, books, and magazines relating to our work, which have come (sometimes to the number of over a hundred in a single day) to my table.

In January of this year I succeeded in having some thirty-six thousand compositions written on kindness to animals by the pupils of the Boston Grammar schools.

My smallest *monthly* issue of "*Our Dumb Animals*" during the year has been 36,000, and the largest 75,000.

We have formed during the year nearly two thousand *new* "*Bands of Mercy*," making a total of *nine thousand one hundred and sixteen Bands*.

Of course much of this work has depended for its success upon the generous gifts of numerous friends to our "*American Humane Education Society*" and "*Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*," in addition to which thousands of dollars have been placed in my hands with unlimited discretion to use in whatever way might seem to me best.

To those who have so generously contributed, and *more than all* to the Divine Providence which has inspired, governed, and directed, should all who are interested in our work, including "the birds of the air," and "the beasts of the field," and "the cattle on a thousand hills," be ever grateful.

1891.

This year has been one of intense work and most gratifying success, with an enormous correspondence, an enormous receipt of papers and magazines from the *about twenty thousand* editors to whom "*Our Dumb Animals*" has been regularly sent by our "*American Humane Education Society*," very large numbers of them containing editorials and articles taken from ours, and editorials in commendation of, and relating to, our humane work.

Our educational missionaries have been active in founding "*Humane Societies*" and "*Bands of Mercy*."

Our *English editions* of "*Black Beauty*" have gone up from 216,000 on January 1st to about 600,000; and from our success other publishers have been induced to print and circulate in advertising editions probably not less than 400,000 copies more, making a total of something like a million copies, *probably by far the largest number ever issued of any book in the world in the same length of time from publication*. Acting upon our suggestion, a memorial fountain has been erected in honor of its author Anna Sewell, soon, we doubt not, to be followed by others. Our \$500 prize essays on vivisection I have sent already to nearly 3,000 physicians and to the presidents of all our American colleges.

Our German and Italian editions of "*Black Beauty*" are printed, and our Spanish and others are soon to follow.

Our "*Bands of Mercy*" have reached the number of 11,290 in all our States and Territories except Alaska, and in foreign countries.

Our publications have not only been sent over this country, but widely over the world, to *Mexico, Brazil, Europe, Persia, China, Japan, Syria*, and have been introduced into the public schools of places as far distant as New Zealand. The readers of "*Our Dumb Animals*" know the grand work they have already done and are now doing, and the immense gratuitous circulation we have given them in our own country and elsewhere.

Our prosecuting department was never more efficient or better equipped.

I have recently offered, in behalf of our "*American Humane Education Society*," a prize of *one thousand dollars* for the best equestrian drama of "*Black Beauty*;" and this offer is being highly commended by our leading newspapers, and will, I am sure, result in great good.

On this October 30th I am notified by letter that the reading of "*Our Dumb Animals*" in Holland has led to a *Dutch* edition of "*Black Beauty*" and the establishing of the "*Dutch Band of Mercy*."

Also comes a letter from Beirut, Syria, telling me that "*Black Beauty*" is now being translated there into the *Arabic language*, and asking my help to secure a cheap edition to be distributed gratuitously in *Syria, Palestine, and Egypt*, where terrible cruelty is inflicted on dumb animals.

ONE HUNDRED AND SEVENTEEN MILLIONS AND EIGHTY
THOUSAND PAGES.

A kind invitation received November 1st from *Frances E. Willard*, to attend the *World's Congress of the "Woman's Christian Temperance Union,"* to be held in Boston from November 13th to 18th, and which contains the statement that this powerful organization of *two hundred and fifty thousand women* had printed in the past year *over a hundred millions of pages of temperance literature*, led me to investigate and find that our "*American Humane Education Society*," from November 1st, 1890, to November 1st, 1891, printed *about one hundred and nine millions and two hundred and eighty thousand pages of humane literature*, and had then printing about *eight hundred thousand pages more*.

During the same time our "*Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*" printed *about seven millions of pages*; making a total of about *one hundred and seventeen millions and eighty thousand pages of humane literature* printed by our two Societies in one year.

My course in offering prizes for the best essays on *both sides* of the vivisection question *at first* brought down upon me the wrath of the "*Zoöphilist*," organ of the British anti-vivisection societies, which pronounced my conduct *monstrous*.

I answered in August "*Our Dumb Animals*" as follows:—

OUR ANTI-VIVISECTION FRIENDS.

Our anti-vivisection friend in London, editor of the British Anti-vivisection Society's organ, "*The Zoöphilist*," states that we have paid \$250 for the best essay *favoring* vivisection, and, *omitting to state* that we also paid a similar sum of \$250 for the best essay *against* vivisection, pronounces our conduct "*monstrous*."

And he, or she, or some other good anti-vivisection friend, has been kindly sending *marked copies* of the paper containing this statement—*we will presume with no bad motive*—to some of the best friends of our "*American Humane Education Society*."

We are rather glad of it, because it gives us a good opportunity for saying what has been for some time on our mind, namely, that we are afraid our anti-vivisection friends, in their zeal to relieve the sufferings of dumb animals, have fallen into the same error which, in bygone ages, led the Catholic to deal *unwisely* with the Protestant, the Protestant with the Puritan, and the Puritan in his turn with the Baptist and the Quaker.

There is a world of wisdom in the old fable in which *the Wind* and *the Sun* undertook to make a traveller throw off his cloak.

While the *Wind*, with its fiercest and chilliest blasts, only caused the traveller to wrap his cloak more closely around him, the *Sun* soon won the victory.

Our anti-vivisection friends have now been at work in Europe *some fifteen years*, and in America *some seven*. What have they accomplished?

In Continental Europe there has been an enormous increase of vivisection, and, so far as we can learn, *not a single case ever prevented*.

In America the same.

In England, where some laws have been enacted, *an enormous increase of vivisection*.

When, in our good city of Boston, it is impossible, by the payment of \$1000, to obtain evidence to prove a single case of the docking which is still practised (*though, we are glad to say, not by our best citizens*), how can humane societies expect to stop medical students, instructed to believe they are acting in the interests of medical progress, from performing vivisections?—or obtain any practical

limitations of them, *unless they can win the approval and assistance of the best men of the medical profession?*

And is there not great danger that in anathematizing the professors and teachers of our medical schools, and the men who largely lead that profession, they may arouse antagonisms which will do more harm than good?

Is it not possible that our anti-vivisection friends, in their zeal to prevent suffering, have *already* aroused antagonisms which have tended to *produce rather than repress* the enormous increase of this practice?

The world's history shows that very little can be gained by denouncing those who, *without criminal intent, differ with us in views of right.*

Is there not a better way?

We think there is.

We believe there are lots of good and humane men in the medical profession who, *if convinced*, will go as far as any one to prevent unnecessary cruelty.

If our anti-vivisection friends *must* regard the leaders of our medical schools as *enemies*, then let them — having tried one method which has thus far resulted in almost total failure — now try another which is more in accordance with the *spirit* of "*the Sermon on the Mount*:" —

"But I say unto you, *Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you.*"

There is no other picture in the world which has so moved human hearts as *the Crucifixion*.

There is no prayer which has come down to us through the ages with greater power than "*Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.*"

GEO. T. ANGELL.

The above article, or some other cause, seemed to result in a change of views, as appears in the following taken from the "Zoöphilist," of September, 1891:—

"It was certainly a happy idea on the part of Mr. Angell to offer an equal prize (\$250) for the best essay on either side, and then to bind them together in one pamphlet."

In September, 1891, "*Our Dumb Animals*," I added this:—

OUR ANTI-VIVISECTION FRIENDS.

We trust that our anti-vivisection friends, in their zeal to abolish *one form* of suffering, will not forget that there are *other forms* which demand their sympathy.

More than a thousand millions of the human race, in every generation, pass through sickness and pain into the great unknown.

Millions of them, during every hour of the day and night, are tortured to greater or less extent with mental and physical suffering.

War, pestilence, drunkenness, and crime bring agonies which no pencil can paint or pen describe.

The tree of cruelty, *like the great Banian tree of India*, has, it may be, a thousand trunks.

In *the animal world* millions die of contagious and other diseases which medical science has thus far failed to discover any means of preventing.

Hundreds of thousands die in transportation on our railroads and ocean steamers.

Hundreds of thousands die of cold and starvation on our great plains.

Millions die in our slaughter-houses with unnecessary suffering—often standing and witnessing the slaughter of other animals, *knowing as well as human beings* that their turn is coming next.

The moanings of hundreds of thousands of cattle are heard every spring when deprived of their offspring.

Millions of beautiful birds are killed and wounded to supply women with ornaments, and to gratify those *who find sport in killing*.

To hundreds of thousands of horses *life is suffering until death gives relief*.

It is no fault of ours.

We are brought into this world by no choice of our own.

We must take it as we find it.

But one thing we can do, namely, try to make it happier and better both for own generation and for those that will follow us; and *one thing* there is which strikes *right at the roots* of all cruelty, *and that is humane education*—*humane education* in all our schools and Sunday schools and homes.

Every humane publication that our "*American Humane Education Society*" sends out *helps on the work*.

The half million copies of "*Black Beauty*" we have already sent

out, and the millions in various languages we hope to, will all *help on the work*.

The missionaries we are employing and the "*Humane Societies*" we are forming *help on the work*.

The prizes we have offered to college students, editors, and others, *help on the work*.

The *over ten thousand "Bands of Mercy"* we have already formed, and the *hundreds of thousands* we hope to form, are, and will all be, so many fires kindled at the roots of this *great Banian tree* of cruelty, suffering, and crime.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," November, 1891.)

HOW THE ELLEN M. GIFFORD FOUNTAIN CAME TO BE BUILT.

Tens if not hundreds of thousands of our Boston citizens have seen the drinking fountain for horses erected by our *Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals*, at the corner of Beacon Street and Brookline and Brighton avenues, *in memory of Ellen M. Gifford, of New Haven, Connecticut*, and comparatively few have ever passed it without seeing thirsty horses standing around it drinking.

Like the *Dorothea L. Dix* fountain, which, in accordance with the will of that excellent and distinguished woman, I caused to be erected in Custom-house Square, it has proved a gift of inestimable value to Boston's thirsty horses.

How did it happen to be erected?

On the evening of May 20th, 1874, I had the pleasure of addressing, in the Old State House at New Haven, the Connecticut Legislature. Several ladies were present, and I was told that an aged lady named *Marett* had taken great interest in our humane work. The next morning, having a little time before taking the train for New York, where I was to address the "American Social Science Association," I thought I would call upon this lady. She was very glad to see me, and asked me *who paid my expenses*. I answered that *I always paid my own*.

Some three years later she died, and I was notified that she had left me in her will *a thousand dollars*.

With that thousand dollars I printed *seventy-six thousand copies* of "*Five Questions Answered*," and named it "*The Marett Tract*," and distributed them, at my own expense, very widely over this country.

This gave great satisfaction to her daughter, *Mrs. Ellen M.*

Gifford, and subsequently she sent twenty thousand dollars to found and support "*The Ellen M. Gifford Sheltering Home for Animals*," at Brighton.

At her death she gave us by will *thirty thousand dollars more* in trust, to use the interest to help maintain this Sheltering Home, and *twenty-five thousand dollars to use as we deemed best for the protection of dumb animals*.

I thought a fountain should be erected to her memory. Our directors agreed with me, and so I caused it to be erected.

In addition to the \$30,000 given us in trust to support "*The Sheltering Home*," I understand that \$50,000 more has been given by her executors, in accordance with her will, *directly to "The Ellen M. Gifford Sheltering Home Corporation,"* which controls the Home.

I think it proper to add here, that while our *Massachusetts Society P. C. A.* has, in accordance with my plans and wishes, spent a great deal of money outside the State, *it has received in return, from people residing outside the State, many thousands of dollars more than it has spent.*

But it is my hope that I shall be able to use, *through our "American Humane Education Society,"* in carrying humane education, "*Humane Societies,*" and "*Bands of Mercy*" all over this American Continent, *not only what we are now receiving from outside the State, but large contributions from humane citizens of Massachusetts; for I trust that Massachusetts will be behind no other State in this noble work of humanely educating the American people.*

GEO. T. ANGELL.

(From "*Our Dumb Animals*," October, 1891.)

THE WHOLE IN A NUTSHELL.

What is your object, Mr. Angell?

Answer. To humanely educate the American people for the purpose of stopping *every form of cruelty, both to human beings and the lower animals. That is my object.*

How do you propose to do it?

1st. By enlisting the teachers of every State and Territory to carry humane instruction into all American public and private schools.

2d. By enlisting the educational, religious, and secular press of the country to help form a public sentiment which will tend to check cruelty of every kind.

3d. By enlisting the Protestant and Roman Catholic clergy of the country in efforts to unite religious and humane education in all their churches and Sunday schools.

4th. By sending humane information, and the gems of humane literature, pictures, songs, and stories, through the press and otherwise, *as I have been sending "Our Dumb Animals" and "Black Beauty," all over this country.*

5th. By the employment of missionaries, forming "*Humane Societies*" and *hundreds of thousands* of "*Bands of Mercy*" in schools, Sunday schools, and elsewhere, similar to *the over ten thousand* we have already formed.

6th. By showing the millions of American youth, in ways too numerous to be mentioned in this statement, *that every kind word they speak or kind act they do makes their own lives happier, and better prepares them for what may come after.*

7th. By building up in our colleges, schools, and elsewhere a *spirit of chivalry and humanity*, which shall in coming generations substitute ballots for bullets, prevent anarchy and crime, *protect the defenceless, maintain the right*, and hasten the coming of peace on earth and good will to every harmless living creature, both human and dumb.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," December, 1891.)

THOUGHTS FOR TEACHERS AND CLERGYMEN.

KINDNESS TO ANIMALS IN SCHOOLS AND SUNDAY SCHOOLS.

What is the use of teaching kindness to animals in schools and Sunday schools?

Answer. The eminent French teacher De Sailly says that when he began to teach kindness to animals in his school, he found his pupils became not only kinder to animals *but also kinder to each other.*

In a large Scottish public school at Edinburgh, out of *about seven thousand pupils*, carefully taught kindness to the lower animals, it was found *that not one had ever been charged with a criminal offence in any court.*

Out of two thousand criminals inquired of in American prisons, some years ago, it was found *that only twelve had any pet animal during their childhood.*

Edward Everett Hale says: "*We are all in the same boat, both*

animals and men. You cannot promote kindness to one without benefiting the other."

Rev. Dr. Hedge, of Harvard University, writes of our humane educational work: "*I greatly approve of your enterprise, which seems to me the best charity of the day.*"

Frances E. Willard writes: "*I look upon your mission as a sacred one, not second to any founded in the name of Christ.*"

Catharine Smithies, of England, writes: "*I think the teaching to be kind to the lower animals is preparing the way for the gospel of Christ.*"

What has made the Quakers humane?

How happened it that while all the other American Colonies were at war with the Indians, the Quakers, under William Penn, alone maintained with them the most peaceful relations?

Is there anything which strikes more directly at the roots of wars, riots, anarchy, and every form of cruelty, than humane education of the children in all our public, private, and Sunday schools?

If you admit that humane education of the children is a good thing, the next question is *how to accomplish it.*

Can you do it by telling children *they ought to be good?*

Can you do it by telling them *they ought to love God*, of whom many of them know but very little?

Can you do it by telling them *they ought to love fathers and mothers*, many of whom are anything but lovable?

Can you do it by telling them to love *inanimate objects*, like trees and flowers, *which cannot show gratitude or return affection?*

Please think and tell me if you can find a better way under heaven for making children merciful than by teaching them to be constantly doing kind acts and saying kind words to God's lower creatures, by whom they are surrounded, and which they are meeting on the streets and elsewhere a hundred times a day.

Please think again and tell me another thing, namely, whether *every kind act we do and every kind word we speak, which adds to the happiness of others, does not also add to our own happiness; and when we teach the boy or girl to be doing these kind acts and saying these kind words a hundred times a day to the lower animals, are we not teaching what will make their own lives happier?*

Is it not then desirable to introduce this teaching into our schools?

And will not *Sunday schools* be more attractive to children if some part of their time is given to the good, noble, and merciful thoughts and deeds of this nineteenth century, as set forth in the humane literature now being widely published?

Now, if we find that humane teachings ought to be made a part of the instruction in our schools and Sunday schools, and that no better way has thus far been devised than to *include* in those teachings the teaching of kindness to the lower animals, how can we best teach it?

I answer: We have formed already in America over ten thousand "*Bands of Mercy*."

They are in every State and Territory but Alaska — some of them in places as far distant as China and Japan.

We teach in them, by picture, song, and story, kindness *both to our own race and to every harmless living creature.*

They can be formed in any school or Sunday school in ten minutes. *It costs nothing* to form them, and *only as much or little time as is found profitable need be given to them.*

Immediately on their formation our "*American Humane Education Society*" gives to each band, *without cost* for one year, its monthly paper "*Our Dumb Animals*," full of humane stories, poems, and information, *and a complete outfit of humane literature sufficient for all the meetings that may be held during the year*, and full directions and suggestions.

In conclusion, then, please carefully consider,

1st. Whether you can find anything more likely *to prevent cruelty and bring happiness into the lives* of those taught than humane education?

2d. Whether you can find *any better plan* of humane education than that which includes teaching children to do kind acts and speak kind words to those that always *show gratitude for kindness and return love for love?*

3d. Whether you can find *any cheaper or better way to begin* than by simply forming a "*Band of Mercy*," whose only pledge is, "*I will try to be kind to all harmless living creatures and to protect them from cruel usage;*" and receive from our "*American Humane Education Society*," for each band, a full outfit of humane literature for one year *without cost.*

With one more thought I close. If it is certain that the prevention of domestic and foreign wars and *every form of cruelty in the future* is to depend largely on the humane education we now give the children in our public, private, and Sunday schools, *is it not equally certain that the future strength and vitality of all benevolent societies and institutions for the prevention and relief of human suffering is to depend largely on this same humane education?*

Does not humane education in church, school, and home nourish and

sustain the tree of which all our ten thousand charities are leaves and branches?

In this view was the Rev. Dr. Hedge right or wrong when he wrote me, "I greatly approve of your enterprise, *which seems to me the best charity of the day*"?

Was Frances E. Willard right or wrong when she wrote me, "*I look upon your mission as a sacred one, not second to any founded in the name of Christ*"?

Was Catharine Smithies right or wrong when she wrote me, "*I think the teaching to be kind to the lower animals is preparing the way for the gospel of Christ*"?

GEO. T. ANGELL.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," August, 1891.)

"FROM THE MOUNTAINS TO THE SEA."

Occasionally we get a letter from some good friend who thinks that he or she has a wiser way in regard to something than we have.

While to all such we give careful attention, we think it proper to say that our "*American Humane Education Society*" is now moving, on carefully considered plans, on a "*March*" which may prove vastly more important to this nation and the world than Sherman's "*March from the mountains to the sea.*"

The sending this paper monthly to all the editors of North America north of Mexico,—the formation of over eleven thousand "*Bands of Mercy*" in every State and Territory but Alaska,—the printing in a little over a year of over half a million copies of "*Black Beauty*," now being translated by us into various European and Asiatic languages,—the offering a prize of one thousand dollars for the best equestrian drama of "*Black Beauty*," to be seen, we think, by hundreds of thousands in this and other countries,—the offering of a prize to all the college students of America for the best essay on "*The Effect of Humane Education on the Prevention of Crime*," and sending to all their libraries our humane publications, and to the students themselves some seventy thousand copies of condensed humane information,—the offering to all American editors a similar prize of three hundred dollars, for a similar essay, and sending to them all copies of condensed humane information,—the offering of two prizes of two hundred and fifty dollars each for the ablest essays on vivisection, which we hope to get the means to send to every editor and every physician in America,—these are only some of the plans already undertaken, and we have still larger

and more important ones for the future, if the kind Providence which has hitherto so wonderfully helped us shall give us the power to carry them out.

For what has been done we claim no personal credit. We have simply acted upon thoughts which have come to us in the day, and the night, from we know not where, and endeavored to do what *something has told us we ought*. When the "March" is completed and the great open sea is reached, then we shall perhaps be able to determine whether we have been wisely or unwisely directed.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," February, 1892.)

OUR MINISTER TO CHILI SHOT, AND WAR INEVITABLE.

THIS was the report circulated in Boston, and brought to me on the evening of January 27th, 1892. I immediately sat down and wrote the following petition, which I should have had presented to our Legislature next day, and should have endeavored through our Boston papers and the "Associated Press" to have had similar petitions presented to the Legislatures of other States; but next morning, January 28th, came news that the report was false, and the war cloud passing over.

But, as it may be suggestive in future similar difficulties, I send it through "*Our Dumb Animals*" to about twenty thousand American editors who receive this paper.

To the Honorable Senate and House of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, now in session :

Respectfully *but most earnestly* prays the "*American Humane Education Society*," incorporated under the laws of this Commonwealth, that, in view of the existing difficulties between this country and our sister Republic of Chili, your Honorable Bodies will, *in the interests of humanity and Christian civilization*, pass at the earliest possible moment a resolution requesting our Massachusetts members of Congress to use their utmost efforts to secure the peaceful settlement of these difficulties by arbitration, to the end that the sea-ports of Chili may not be bombarded by our navy, and *the lives and property of thousands of innocent Christian men, women, and children be endangered, and perhaps sacrificed, because of the criminal acts of a comparatively small number of irresponsible men.*

Trusting that this petition and prayer may be promptly granted, I am, most respectfully, in behalf of the "*American Humane Education Society*,"

GEO. T. ANGELL, President.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," February, 1892.)

ANGEL — ANGELL.

IN answer to questions sometimes asked, our name is pronounced precisely like the above in the Bible. We were never a clergyman or a doctor. The money which has enabled us to work for dumb animals over twenty years without pay, and give some thousands of dollars to the work, was made in the practice of law in the city of Boston from 1851 to 1868.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," February, 1892.)

PREACHING THE GOSPEL.

A CLERGYMAN in southern Massachusetts had in his parish a very sharp, money-making old gentleman, who attended church regularly Sundays, but sold in his grocery store a good deal of rum week-days. The clergyman called upon him one day and asked him to stop selling rum. He replied that *he* should be glad to stop, but the fact was that *his brother*, who was in partnership with him, was determined to sell rum, and while he didn't wish the clergyman to say anything about it either to his brother or anybody else, yet it was absolutely impossible, on account of his brother's determination, to give up selling it. Notwithstanding the caution, the good clergyman thought he would see the brother. The brother said at once that *he would be glad to give up selling rum*, if his brother (the gentleman first referred to) would consent. The clergyman then thought he had accomplished his mission, and went back to the first brother, telling him how happy he was at the result, but the only reply he got was, "I think, Elder, you had better stick to *preachin' the gospel*, and let this temperance business alone." The good elder thought he was preaching the gospel in stopping the selling of rum.

Our "*American Humane Education Society*" preaches from no pulpit, but by sending out over half a million copies of *only one* of its humane publications, "*Black Beauty*," it has during the past year and a half reached perhaps hundreds of thousands who *seldom or never attend church or see a religious tract or newspaper*. On the subject of temperance it is perhaps on some accounts the best book ever written, because it reaches such multitudes of those who most need it and yet *will never read a temperance paper or tract*.

So on questions of *peace, observance of the Sabbath*, and, in fact, as one good bishop said, "*almost everything that goes to make a good Christian character*," this book is preaching the gospel, day and night, Sundays and week-days.

Clergymen on the Sabbath tell their hearers of the great truths of immortality, but tens and perhaps hundreds of thousands who never hear those sermons are reached by our publications, and *set to thinking by being told that the greatest scientist and teacher we ever had on this continent, Agassiz, was a firm believer in the immortality of animals*. We believe that our over eleven thousand "*Bands of Mercy*" (Catholic and Protestant), with the publications our "*American Humane Education Society*" is sending them, bearing on its seal, "*Glory to God*," "*Peace on Earth*," "*Kindness, Justice, and Mercy to every Living Creature*," are preaching the gospel as truly as it is preached from any pulpit in the land. "*Go ye out into the world and preach the gospel to every creature*." *Is not that precisely what our "American Humane Education Society" is now doing?*

GEO. T. ANGELL.

NEUTRAL FLAG.

As, in wars between nations, ships sailing under a *neutral flag* enter all ports; so in wars between religious sects and political parties, this little vessel of ours, *Our Dumb Animals*, sails monthly and every second month into *every editorial office in America north of Mexico*, and into many in other lands, to distribute its cargoes of mercy through *thousands* of channels into *millions* of homes which, *under a different flag*, it could never have reached.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

IN writing one's own history, the writer is always liable to the charge of too much self-commendation; for we all like to be well thought of, and cannot be expected to depreciate our own work.

On the other hand, nobody is so familiar with our history as ourselves; and when others attempt to give it, they are quite likely to follow the example of the old lady who rubbed out all the charges made by her husband with chalk on the back-door, and then undertook to remedy the matter by writing other charges which seemed to her equally good. The press has repeatedly made me a "*Doctor*," a "*Reverend*," and a "*Reverend Doctor*." Once I particularly told, from the pulpit, the Chicago reporters that *I was not* a clergyman. It made no difference. Next morning I found in the papers that the *Rev. Dr. Angell* of Boston delivered the address.

History written by strangers is very uncertain. In attempting to name this continent after its first discoverer, the huge blunder was made of giving it the name of a man who had not the slightest claim to that honor.

Shortly after our late war, a book was published, and given wide circulation, which represented Gen. Grant's services as comparatively unimportant. It is related, that, when some of his officers indignantly called his attention to the subject, the General calmly replied, "*I expect to find out some time that I was never in that war at all.*" If Gen. Grant would write, or cause to be written, his own recollections of the war and subsequent incidents, it would be a most valuable contribution to American history.

I remember but one grave charge ever made against my work; and that was at Washington, by Gen. Sherman. Two ladies called on him to tell him that I was trying to organize a society for the prevention

of cruelty to animals, and to ask his help. The old general, knowing at that time very little about such societies (though he is now a vice-president of one of them), at once jumped to the conclusion *that I must be trying to get some government office*. To those familiar with things at Washington, the general's conclusion will not seem so strange, as possibly nine out of ten who visit that beautiful city want something of the kind.

I forgave him, as I subsequently told a Washington audience, on the same ground that a Roman-Catholic servant-girl in England thought her master, a Lord Bishop of the Protestant-Episcopal Church, might be saved.

He said to her one day, "I suppose, Bridget, as I am a Protestant and a heretic, you as a Roman Catholic think I shall be finally lost."

"Oh, no, sir!" said Bridget. "I doesn't think you will be lost, sir."

"Why not, — why not, Bridget?" said the Bishop. "How can I, being a Protestant and a heretic, be saved?"

"Well, I thinks, sir," said she, "you will be saved, sir, because of your *ignorance*, sir."

And that was precisely the ground on which I forgave Gen. Sherman for thinking I wanted an office.

IMMORTALITY OF ANIMALS.

In my address at the Boston Theatre, to the Boston drivers, I referred to the fact that more than half the human race believe in some form of a future life for horses as well as men, and that *in that half* were many of the most eminent Christian clergy and many of the world's most distinguished scholars, including Agassiz, probably the greatest scientist we ever had on the American continent. I also told them that I believed vastly more in the power of *kind words and humane education* than in prosecutions; and that, out of three thousand two hundred and forty-three complaints of cruelty that our officers had investigated during the preceding year, we had prosecuted only a hundred and forty-two. I also told them about our great army of mercy, whose mottoes were "Glory to God," "Peace on Earth," "Kindness to all harmless living creatures," and whose pledge was that every member would try to protect from injustice and wrong *every suffering human being and every suffering dumb beast*.

I think it would be a good thing if the drivers of every city, upon whom the happiness of horses so largely depends, could be thus gathered and addressed.

DOCTORS.

And speaking of *doctors*, I will put on record here that I believe the time will come, though probably not in my day, when our colleges will not only confer the degrees of *Doctor of Laws*, *Doctor of Philosophy*, *Doctor of Medicine*, *Doctor of Divinity*, *Doctor of Agriculture*, etc., but another which will be deemed quite as honorable, — *Doctor of Humanity*.

DIARIES.

It has been my habit for many years to keep a daily diary, or journal, of all matters I have cared to remember. Once a week I post this into another, kept in a different place, to guard against danger of loss. I have found this of great value, and advise others to do it.

SLEEP.

There are certainly tens of thousands, and probably hundreds of thousands, who suffer through life in greater or less degree from inability to sleep. Some take narcotics, opiates, anæsthetics. For the benefit of those who do not, I will say that I suppose there are very few in this country *who have slept less* than I have; but I have never taken any thing to stupefy, and I am now in my sixty-ninth year, while thousands of good sleepers I have known have long since gone to the last sleep that knows no waking here. It was undoubtedly wise to change my professional life from court to office practice: but in other matters I was compelled to choose between living the life of a vegetable, or losing sleep; and I chose the latter.

In the founding of the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, I had very little sleep for several months; in England no more, and I was often so weak that I could not walk the streets without dizziness. My attacks on adulteration were full of wakeful nights; and my lectures and addresses have rarely failed to cost me in delivery one or two nights of little or no sleep, and in preparation often many nights of little sleep.

But I am alive, in my sixty-ninth year, and able to work; and thankful, that, while there are so many headaches and heartaches in the world, my life seems to grow happier as I grow older. I have no desire for rest: on the contrary, my wish is to be usefully and happily employed through eternity.

FINIS.

It is often the lot of those who attempt to travel somewhat in advance of the majority on any path of the world's progress, to

receive plenty of abuse in their lifetimes, with more or less praise after they are dead. It may be useful to others to know that my experience in endeavoring to secure increased protection for animals has been singularly fortunate.

I do not know now many diplomas and certificates of honorary membership of American and European societies I have received at various times, but they are quite numerous. Nor how many Bands of Mercy in various States have taken my name: I have been notified of a considerable number. But I do know the kind words that have been published on both sides of the Atlantic, in regard to what I have attempted to do, would fill a considerable volume. If any error has been made, it has been in giving me more credit than I deserved. I have done and attempted simply duty, and what I have been able to accomplish has been with the aid of many others; and I have been richly rewarded both in the doing, and in the consciousness of what has been done.

It is beyond the limits of this volume, to give lectures, addresses, essays, pamphlets, leaflets, editorials, newspaper-articles, and other papers I have written.

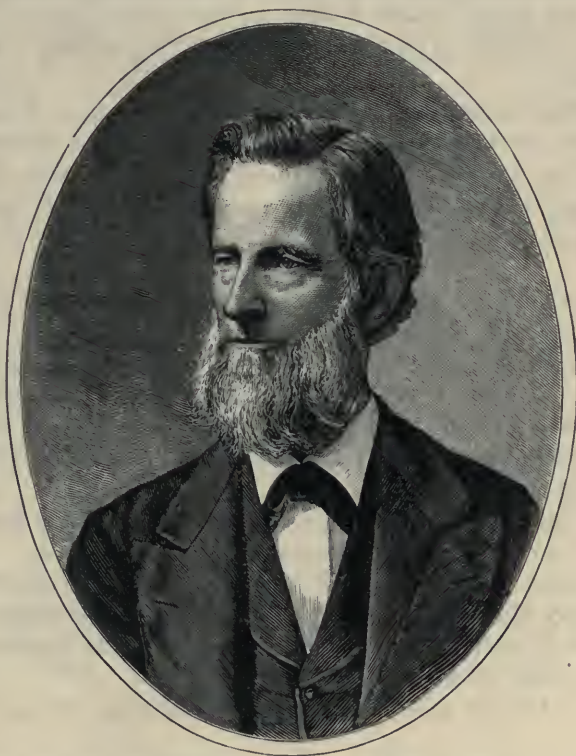
Some of them will be found in "*Our Dumb Animals*," beginning with its first number, June, 1868; some of them in seventeen scrap-books I have carefully preserved; and some only in manuscript. A few appear in this volume.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

Boston, November 1st, 1891.

APPENDIX.

PHOTOGRAPH AND BRIEF SKETCH WHICH APPEARED IN
VARIOUS HUMANE JOURNALS FROM 1876 TO 1879.



GEORGE T. ANGELL.

MR. ANGELL was born in Southbridge, Worcester County, Mass., June 5, 1823. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1846, commencing the study of the law with the Hon. Richard Fletcher of Boston, who was a judge of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts; and continuing it in the office of Charles G. Loring, Esq., a dis-

tinguished counsellor of the Massachusetts bar. He also studied at the Harvard University Law School. He was admitted to the bar in 1851, formed a co-partnership with Hon. Samuel E. Sewall of Boston, an eminent lawyer of the State, and was soon engaged in a large and lucrative practice.

In 1864 several cases of extreme cruelty to dumb animals led him to provide by will, that a portion of his property, after his decease, should be devoted to circulating, in schools and elsewhere, information calculated to secure for them a higher protection.

In 1868 Mr. Angell entered upon the work of protecting animals in Massachusetts; and, with Mrs. William Appleton and others, founded the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, of which he was elected president, which office he has held ever since.

In 1869 he visited Europe, partly for the restoration of his health, but largely in the interests of humanity. He was received most cordially by the British Royal Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, before which he made an exhibition of his plans, and related a history of the work already accomplished in the United States.

He found in London a most distinguished and efficient ally in the Baroness Burdett-Coutts.

Mr. Angell from the start saw the absolute necessity of humane education. He proposed, and during the first nine months edited, "Our Dumb Animals," the first periodical of its kind in the world. The Massachusetts society printed two hundred thousand copies of its first number.

In England he urged the Royal Society to establish "The Animal World," and the Baroness Burdett-Coutts to form the "Ladies' Humane Educational Committee of England." That committee has given a wide circulation to humane literature in Great Britain.

In 1869 he attended and took an active part in the congress of the societies of the world at Zurich, Switzerland.

In 1870 he went to Chicago, and organized the Illinois Humane Society.

Since his return from Europe, he has written various pamphlets. Among them are "Five Questions answered," "Transportation of Animals," "Protection of Animals," "The Check-Rein," etc., etc. He has written also many articles for the press. He has addressed more than a hundred audiences upon the prevention of cruelty to animals; among which were the Legislatures of several States, conventions of clergymen and teachers, scientific meetings, and various

colleges and normal schools. He is an honorary member of a large number of European societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals.

As a director of the American Social Science Association, he has given much time to the investigation of the growth and increase of crime in the United States, and to the means of preventing it; delivering many lectures upon the subject before conventions and associations, besides writing for the newspapers on the same subject.

He has also, of late, given much time to investigating and publishing information in regard to the adulteration of human food, and in advocating the organization of public health associations.

"He has also been connected with various charitable organizations for the relief of the poor. But the principal portion of his spare time during the past eleven years has been given, gratuitously, to the protection of dumb animals; because he thinks they are most neglected, and because he believes that humane work in their behalf has a direct bearing upon the welfare of man."

Mr. Angell, as chairman of the Executive Committee of the American Humane Association, after its last meeting at Baltimore, gave fifteen addresses before large audiences in Baltimore, Richmond, and Washington, in behalf of protecting animals.

He is a son of a clergyman; adding another name to the long list of men widely known for humane labors, whose fathers were teachers in the Church.

His tracts have had a wide circulation wherever the claims of animals have received attention, and have made his name as familiar as a household-word in that large field of humane labor. Translations of some of them have been made in the French, German, Italian, and Danish languages, and probably others. They have also been reprinted in India, Australia, and South Africa.

It has rarely been the good fortune of any reformers to see so much fruit from their labors as have the leaders of this merciful cause; but as Mr. Angell is yet in full vigor, and much remains to be done, we may hope for many years more of active service in its behalf.

[From "Our Dumb Animals," January, 1869.]

THE MAGNITUDE OF OUR WORK.

It is hardly possible for any one not in it to rightly estimate the magnitude of our work. Take the city of Boston alone, and *one* animal, *the horse*. Our courts are filled with cases of assaults upon men; but it would be speaking *far within bounds* to say, that for every such case there are *twenty cases* of cruel and illegal assaults upon horses. Take into consideration all the overloaded teams, the overloaded omnibuses, the overloaded horse-cars, the cases of fast driving, over-driving, overworking, under-feeding, neglect to water, neglect to properly shelter and protect from the weather, tight check-reins, sores worn by harness, twitchings, beatings, kickings, bad shoeing, bad pavements, bad stables, bad feeding, bad harness, bad grooming, *bad drivers*, and all the other various forms of abuse to which *the horse* is subjected. Then extend the estimate to the whole wide circle of dumb creatures, and to the whole three hundred and odd cities and towns of the State. Let it include all the cattle-trains on the railroads of the State, crowded daily to suffocation with dumb creatures, hungry, thirsty, and sleepless; the merciless bleeding of calves; the bagging of cows; the starving at the cattle-markets; the shearing of sheep in cold weather before they are sent to market; the cruel plucking of live fowls, and their cruel transportation; the cruel transportation of calves *tied*; the abominable treatment of old and worn-out horses; the short feeding of cattle; the cruel methods of slaughtering cattle, sheep, and swine; the cruel methods of killing poultry; the destruction of useful birds; the dog-fights and cock-fights in our cities; and last, though not least, the *almost incalculable tortures practised in the unnecessary dissections of living animals*. Sit down and consider how much you have *personally* seen and heard of; recollect, that, of what transpires in *your own city or town*, you do not see or hear of *one case in a thousand*; add to the population of your own city or town the population of the whole State. Recollect that the human population of the State is outnumbered *twenty to one* by the great *animal population* of the State, which can neither read, write, nor speak. Recollect that we, by our Act of incorporation and the subsequent laws passed at our request, have become the legally authorized guardians and protectors of this innumerable multitude, bound by our public promises and declarations, and the position in which we stand, as well as by our sympathies, to do all that lies in our power for their welfare. Take *all* these things into consideration, *not light-*

ly, for the moment, but with thought and reflection; and you may then begin to realize something of the magnitude of our responsibilities, something of the magnitude of the necessities of the work.

Nor is this all. It strikes deeper at the foundations of society, nay, underlies farther *the very Church itself*, than the unreflecting may have dreamed. Like the Sanitary and Christian Commissions, it forms a grand plateau, on which all good men and women, of *all churches and no church*, can work together for those things which *underlie every church*. It proposes to go into every family of the State, Protestant, Catholic, infidel, and atheist (if such there be), and preach to all and each of them the new evangel, *Peace on earth and good-will to all God's creatures*. When the rights of dumb animals shall be protected, the rights of human beings will be safe. When the children in every home shall learn to spare the useful bird, nor plunder its little nest, systems of State-prison discipline will become less important.

About seven months ago we opened our offices, and commenced operations as a society. In the few weeks preceding we had secured an Act of incorporation, the passage of a code of laws, and an organization numbering, with its patrons, about fifteen hundred. We have already established our agents in many portions of the State. We have prosecuted in all, thus far, forty-two cases of cruelty, and obtained thirty-nine convictions. We have stopped *a great many cases* by warning without prosecution, and *a very large number* without either warning or prosecution. We have secured the purchase of public drinking-fountains for Boston. We have aided in getting an improved specimen car for the transportation of cattle, put on to one of our railroads. We have printed *three hundred and thirty thousand copies of our paper*. Articles from it have been published and republished in the columns of other papers all over the country, to the number of hundreds of thousands more.

Few societies in the State, we think, ever did so much in so little time; and yet we feel that we have *only just begun to work*.

Not until our law shall have been perfected by further legislation and judicial decisions; not until our agents shall be found in every town; not until the rich shall give from their abundance in streams rather than driblets, and the poor according to their ability; not until the pulpit and the press, *those tremendous engines of good or evil*, shall speak plainly in our behalf; not until our paper, or its equivalent, shall be read in every school of the State, and every school boy and girl of the State shall be faithfully instructed as to the rights and wrongs of animals, — not until all these things have been accom-

plished, shall we begin to feel that we are properly coming up to the magnitude of our work. And *then*, when all these shall have been accomplished, if there shall be found in Massachusetts (*which may God grant!*) brains, hearts, and humanity so large that the State cannot give them scope, — why, the nation and the world lie before us, with necessities just as great.

[From "Our Dumb Animals," February, 1869.]

WILL IT PAY?

WE have undertaken a very great work, — no more and no less than the guardianship of the great animal population of the whole State, outnumbering the human twenty to one; a population with no language that we can understand, that cannot testify in the courts, that is placed in the absolute and unlimited power and control, not unfrequently, of the most ignorant, violent, and debased of men.

A HEAVY JOB.

It's a heavy job: we have to deal *not only* with private individuals, but with *great and influential corporations*, with *bad rich men* as well as with *bad poor men*, with *capital* as well as *labor*; with a multitude of cases which no prosecution can reach, as well as those which may be checked by prosecution. It's a heavy job; and if any man expects it to be accomplished with small labor and a little money, he is mistaken. It will task the best ability and the highest benevolence of the State.

ONLY ONE WAY TO DO IT.

There is only one way to do it; and that is to go down to the foundation, and build up. *We must educate the children.* We must create a great public opinion. We must wake up the pulpit and the press, and scatter the literature of humanity until it shall be read in the homes, taught in the schools, hung up on the walls, and all the children of the State shall feel that these animals have been mercifully created by our common Father, and mercifully given to us to use, but *not to abuse*. It's a great work. Will it pay to do it?

SANITARY EFFECTS.

Its sanitary effects will be, drinking-fountains in our cities, watering-troughs in the country, very few cases of hydrophobia, clean and healthy stables, no foul smells from our slaughtering-houses, no nuisances in the keeping of cattle and swine, wholesome meats in our markets, and wholesome milk on our tables.

FINANCIAL EFFECTS.

Its financial effects will be, horses and draught-cattle living and made useful to old age; birds spared to eat up insects and save the fruit; no reduction in the weight of animals by cruel transportation; no reduction of their capacity to labor by bad feeding, want of shelter, overworking, or other bad treatment; the best systems of food, water, rest, exercise, pavements, harness, and care in sickness; and to teach *that the true economy is that which shall keep animals in the highest degree of physical health.*

MORAL EFFECTS.

Its moral effects will be the giving-up of dog-fights, cock-fights, *cruel* races against time or for wagers. It will take the fun out of shooting-matches and hunting-matches. It will interfere with cattle transportation and short feeding, overloading, overdriving, overworking, and every form of abusing. It will substitute kind words for curses, gentle treatment for violence, friendly protection for passionate abuse, love for fear.

POLITICAL EFFECTS.

Last, *but not least*, what will be its political effects? We have a great country here, and what is to become of it God only knows. All the republics that have preceded it have perished. Violence, fraud, crime, and corruption are on the increase. Property and life are becoming insecure. *A government* we must have. Shall it be a government of wise laws, enacted by humane men, administered by an incorruptible judiciary, no wars foreign or domestic, peace, happiness, and prosperity to all? Or shall it be the strong arm of military power, the law of the bayonet, and a great standing army supported by the nation to keep the nation in subjection? One or the other we must have, — all history shows it, — and upon the choice depends our future. We must multiply prisons and jails, courts, judges, and prosecuting-officers, constabulary, police, and soldiers, or we must multiply churches and free schools, earnest home missions, and *the universal dissemination of a religious and humane literature.* The churches *alone* cannot do the work, for they do not reach the great masses that need most to be reached. The schools *alone*, as now conducted, will not do it: for they teach *the intellect*, rather than *the heart*; their prize is *greatness*, rather than *goodness*; and the more you educate the intellect, neglecting the heart, the greater the capacity for evil. Neither the churches nor the schools have saved us

from a great civil war, and the political and financial corruptions growing out of it.

We must have the religious, the intellectual, and the humane combined. The churches must preach humanity as well as Christianity, and the schools must teach it, and the press must carry it where neither churches nor schools can. There is no getting rid of this question, and we have no time to lose. The coming generation is coming fast; and we must make them good citizens, or they will make us a bad nation. You may go into all the schools and homes with book and picture, and song and story, and make the children humane; or you may cause them to grow up cruel, inhumane, cultivating the bad passions, *and they will avenge themselves upon society*. You may take the boy in our streets to-day, and make him a *great good* man, or you may leave him to become a *great bad* one; but the difference may be the difference between peace and war, national prosperity and national ruin. My friend, throw aside all mercy for dumb animals; suppose there were no law to protect them, no penalty for their abuse, no redress for them in this world, and no hope in the next; throw aside all sanitary, financial, and moral considerations; suppose even that you are an atheist, and do not believe there ever was a God: still I say, if you claim to be a good citizen, if you regard the future welfare of your country, *you must provide for the humane education of its children; and that is the grandest feature of our work.*

[From "Boston Daily Advertiser," August 4, 1877.]

THE GREAT PROBLEM.

SUGGESTIONS TOWARD A SOLUTION OF THE LABOR QUESTION.

THE TEMPORARY INDUSTRIAL HOME — SCHOOL OF DOMESTIC INDUSTRY —
TEMPORARY EMPLOYMENT IN CITIES AND TOWNS — PERMANENT EMPLOYMENT IN COLONIES.

To the Editors of the Boston Daily Advertiser.

The following was written by me, previous to the strike, in response to the call of Mrs. Elizabeth Thompson, widely published a few weeks since. In view of circumstances which have since occurred, it is thought better to publish it now.

GEORGE T. ANGELL.

BOSTON, Aug. 3, 1877.

THE LABOR QUESTION.

First, It is not the object of this essay, to show how young gentlemen educated with a view of becoming ministers plenipotentiary at a foreign court, or young ladies educated to suppose that they may some day equal or surpass Margaret Fuller, are to be provided with work consonant with these high aspirations. It is not to show how the sons and daughters of hard-working farmers and mechanics are to live by their wits, without physical labor, and have all the luxuries which money can command. It is not to show how a hundred thousand persons, who have left the farms, and crowded into the cities where they are not wanted, are to remain there and prosper: they can go back to the farms. It is not to show how, through industrial education, we may have, twenty years hence, an unlimited supply of good mechanics, in place of the present over-supply of poor ones; or, how we are to prevent the coming of ten millions of Chinese, with their chop-sticks, to feed on rice and rats, and compete with American labor.

I do not propose to suggest any new methods of dealing with the sick poor, or with orphan children. They must be provided for hereafter, I think, as heretofore, in hospitals and homes supported by public and private charity. When sanitary science shall be taught in our public schools; when cesspools and other deposits of filth are not permitted to drain into wells; when poisonous cooking-dishes and wall-papers, and adulterated articles of food, are driven out of our markets; when the laws of ventilation and cleanliness are better understood by the poor, — then the burden of supporting the *sick* poor will be much diminished.

Doubtless in our large cities there is some destitution amongst healthy unmarried women, though I think it is comparatively small. To relieve this, I would have established, in our cities and larger towns, "temporary industrial homes," the doors of which, upon the two conditions of cleanliness and good behavior, should be open day and night to every poor woman needing shelter and advice. Each should find there a clean bed, plain fare, and some temporary employment. Connected with these I would have schools of "domestic industry," where every woman can be taught gratuitously all branches of housework, and perhaps the cutting and making of men's, women's, and children's clothing. Women should be permitted to remain there, with very plain fare and clothing, until competent to take care of themselves, or until places should be provided for them.

My belief is, that there are thousands of single men in moderate

circumstances in this country, living in boarding-houses and restaurants, who would be glad to marry poor girls thoroughly conversant with all branches of domestic industry, and willing to work. My belief is, that there are hundreds of thousands of families who would be glad to obtain at fair wages, either as servants or "lady helpers," women of this description. My belief is, that no healthy woman, thoroughly understanding housework, laundry-work, or the cutting and making of men's, women's, and children's clothing, need suffer in this country for want of food and shelter. If girls or single women will not obtain this education when freely offered, — preferring to run sewing-machines, or stand all day behind shop-counters, at starvation prices, — then they must take the consequences until they are brought by sickness to the hospitals, or by common-sense to the "industrial temporary home" and the "school of domestic industry."

But to young single men coming into manhood without pecuniary means, and to married men with wives and families dependent upon their labor, the existing state of things presents a more serious aspect. Owing to the unparalleled growth of invention in almost every department of mechanical industry, by which, in many cases, one man is now doing, with the machine, what two, three, or four did without it, hundreds of thousands of healthy men, willing to work, are either wholly or part of the time out of employment, or compelled to labor at prices which are barely sufficient to sustain life.

There is no reason to suppose that we have reached the end of these inventions. There is every reason to suppose that ten years hence the machine will do *more* work, and the man *less*, than at present. It is no wonder that to many the future should seem dark, and the terrible alternatives of crime, starvation, or suicide nearer than ever before. "Yesterday," says a Boston paper, "the police found on the street a man in a fainting condition. He was taken to the Massachusetts General Hospital, where it was found that the cause was *want of food*. He was a cabinet-maker, and for weeks had been walking the city in search of work, living on short allowance, until he fell unconscious on the sidewalk. He is in a critical condition, and has a sick wife and three children." "Lawrence Mahn," says another Boston paper, "a machinist, unemployed and discouraged, committed suicide this morning. He leaves a wife and children." From January, 1875, to October, 1876, four hundred and sixty-eight dead bodies, which could not be identified, were taken from the waters about New-York City, and buried as unknown.

These are solitary facts, illustrating a condition of things which

now exists on a large scale in the cities and towns of this country. There are few persons familiar with charitable work in our cities and larger towns, but could furnish a list of names, within their personal knowledge, of those who are not able to obtain work.

It was the object of the kind-hearted lady offering these prizes to ascertain, and it is the object of this essay to show, how this class of persons may be kept from suicide, starvation, and crime. In some of our cities are already established "temporary industrial homes" for poor men, where each may obtain lodging for a night or two, and something to eat, paying a small sum either in money or labor. There should be such places in all our cities and larger towns; plain fare, a bath-tub, clean beds, to be paid for in work, even if it be no more profitable than the carrying of bricks from one extremity of a yard to another.

Second, I hold that every city and town should be prepared at all times to furnish temporary work, at low wages, to those who are not able to obtain better work elsewhere; because men must live, and it is better that they should live by earning than by begging or stealing.

Saying nothing of the humanitarian aspects of the case, it is cheaper to provide even unprofitable labor than to build and sustain prisons and almshouses. In many of our cities and towns, public improvements are needed; and this labor could be made profitable. Wherever work is provided, tramps and able-bodied beggars can be immediately employed, and will have no excuse for begging.

But how shall we provide permanent work for our unemployed able-bodied men? I answer: There is but one way, under the existing state of things, to do it. They must go on to and till the soil. No trade is so easily learned as that of a farmer. To plough and plant and hoe and sow and gather, are things not difficult to understand. Put ten thousand people — whether they be liberated slaves such as were sent to Liberia, or North-American Indians such as may be found on some of our "reservations," or Mormons such as settled Salt Lake City — on fertile lands, give them domestic animals, implements, seeds, provisions, and they will live, and have plenty of work. The same will hold true, whether the number be greater or less. Several agricultural colonies for the poor were founded in Holland more than fifty years ago. They have proved a success, and have saved large numbers from misery and crime. We have millions of acres of cheap and fertile lands at the West and South, near railroads, standing idle.

Therefore, I say, establish colonies. Put these unemployed men

on alternate quarter-sections of land ; put up for them small houses, mills, shops, a savings bank, and halls to be used for schools week-days, for religious instruction Sundays, and for moral and interesting amusements and instruction evenings ; furnish them tools, transportation, money ; and give each who desires it a conditional deed of his lands and buildings, which on the payment of what has been advanced, with interest, shall vest in him a good title, provided he shall have sustained a good character. Judging from the experience of past colonies, there is no reason why most of these men who are willing and able to work should not, under this system, become in a few years married men, tax-paying citizens, and owners of house and land. This would be no new or doubtful experiment. From the origin of man to the present time, labor has sought and found new channels through colonization. From the settlement of the Pilgrims at Plymouth, and of a different class at Jamestown, the history of this country has been a history of successful colonization. No intelligent person can for a moment doubt that the country is abundantly able to sustain, and some day will sustain, from four to twenty or more times its present population, and the millions of fertile acres now unbroken will be covered with productive farms. That there may be no chance in these colonies for fraud, speculation, or trickery, either financial or political, they should be established and managed, as in Holland, by charitable societies formed for that purpose, under the direction of able, honest, and judicious men, with private funds and such assistance as national and state governments may be induced to grant. The settlement of Kansas was largely the result of the "Kansas Aid Society" of Massachusetts. There ought to be in every State plenty of citizens able and willing to undertake this work.

If it be said that we cannot afford to provide labor for the unemployed, and to establish these colonists, *then* I answer (1st) : We cannot afford *not* to. There were about *ten thousand* criminals in the various prisons of Massachusetts in 1865. There were more than twenty thousand in 1875. In 1876 the average percentage was still higher. From the article of D. A. Wells, in the July, 1877, "North American," it appears that the recipients of public charity in Massachusetts have increased about fifty per cent since 1873. The "Massachusetts State Board of Charities," in their 1876 report, estimate that *organized charitable* societies of Massachusetts are now expending annually not less than two million five hundred thousand dollars for the poor. Statistics of other States show a similar increase of poverty and crime.

Some time since, I was shown a letter from a convict, discharged from the Massachusetts State Prison, in which he expressed a strong desire to "*get in again*;" because, said he, "I am a good deal better off inside than out." "A criminal on the way to the gallows," says "The Pittsburg Commercial," remarked to those in charge of him, "If I had received one-half the kindness earlier which I now receive here, *I should never have been here.*"

And (2d) I answer: If these colonies are well managed by competent and honest men, of whom I think we still have a considerable stock in the country, there is no reason why the sums paid back by the colonists in purchase of their buildings and lands, together with sums received for the alternate reserved quarter-sections and lots, should not pay eventually the whole, or nearly the whole, expense of the colonization, and so make the cost little or nothing of transforming thousands of our able-bodied poor, liable to become criminals, into productive, law-abiding citizens. Under this system, able-bodied men and women would have no excuse for begging. They would be referred at once to the "Temporary Industrial Home," the "School of Industry," the city or town employment-office, or the "Colony;" and all found begging, who should refuse these provisions, might justly and properly be arrested as vagrants, and compelled to earn their living by some kind of physical labor.

This is the plan. How can it be carried out? I answer: Not by individual talking, preaching, or writing. These simply prepare the way. It must be accomplished, as all other great political, religious, and humane movements are, by organized action. If we seek to prevent poverty and crime, the first step is to form in our cities and larger towns organizations for the purpose of preventing them; which organizations I would call "societies for the prevention of poverty and crime." They should be composed of both men and women. On their boards of directors should be both men and women. They should have, as other organizations have, offices, and paid officers constantly employed. They should gather and publish facts,—go before city and town authorities, and State governments, and, if necessary, before Congress, with petitions and arguments, and in all practical ways labor to carry out the purposes for which they are formed.

They should have the aid of the churches. They should be sustained, as the Sanitary and Christian Commissions were, by all good people, whether in churches or out, who are able to take a share of stock in a colony, or contribute a dollar to aid the poor; for there is not a man or woman in this country, who owns house or land or even

a savings-bank book, who has not a vital interest in this question of the increase of poverty and crime.

But suppose we do nothing: what then? I answer: It is known that in many of our large cities, and probably in all, there are organized societies of criminals. The same is true of many of our country towns. I suppose these societies will increase. In a paper read at the annual meeting of the "American Social Science Association" last fall, it was shown that there were then about a hundred thousand communists in this country, with six or more newspapers. I suppose they will increase. Great secret organizations against capital are springing up all over the country, — "labor leagues," "leagues" of engineers, of firemen, of trainmen, Crispins, iron-hearts, Molly Maguires, and perhaps fifty others. I suppose they will increase. I suppose we shall have to build more prisons, and larger ones. We shall have to increase the number of judges, and employ more police. We shall have to keep a larger army, perhaps more ships of war. *We shall* have to pay heavier taxes. AND, after all, I suspect we shall have more thefts, robberies, murders, incendiary fires; more ships blown up, or buildings tumbled down, by dynamite explosions. As the number of our mechanics and laborers out of employment shall increase, and it becomes a choice with them between suicide, starvation, and crime, I suspect we shall have to be more careful about our policies of insurance.

Not long since, I remarked to a gang of laborers at work on a building which seemed to stand on a poor foundation, that I feared a shock of an earthquake would tumble down half the city. One of them instantly replied, "I wish it would, sir: then we should have work." The Jews take good care of their poor. It has been more than two hundred years since a Jew was hung in England, and then only for forgery.

Finally, I have now stated, within the limits prescribed, the conclusions to which I have come after some years of thought. The "*temporary industrial home*," "*the school of domestic industry*," *temporary employment by cities and towns*, and permanent employment in colonies. The means of attaining these ends, — *organizations*, as before stated, formed for the purpose; to the first of which, formed in my own city, I shall be happy to give a sum equivalent to the highest prize offered for these essays. If these plans shall be deemed by the judges worthy of publication, and good shall result therefrom, I shall be glad. If other plans shall be thought better, and more good shall result therefrom, I shall be more glad.

LITERA.

[In Tremont Temple, Oct. 19, 1881.]

NOR shall I speak to you this evening about the immortality of animals, believed in by more than half the human race. The fact is, we have about as much as we can attend to, to look after their mortality, without discussing much the question of their immortality. I don't know whether they are immortal or not: but I do know that away back in the Book of Genesis I find that "*God made the cattle;*" in another place, "*God remembered the cattle;*" in another, "*He caused the grass to grow for the cattle;*" and in another, "*The cattle on a thousand hills are his.*" Now, if we are taking care of *God's cattle*, are we, or are we not, in his service — just as truly as the minister who preaches the gospel, just as truly as the one who goes missionary to the heathen? And do you think, in the day of final account, when we stand before the bar of infinite justice to answer for deeds done in the body, *God will forget* the men who took care of his cattle, or the women who took care of his cattle? Or will he say to them, "*Inasmuch as ye have done it unto the least of these my creatures, ye have done it also unto me*"?

My friends, carry these thoughts home with you to-night, and consider what *you* can say or do to help *God's cattle*; and if you can say any thing, say it; and if you can do any thing, do it; and thank God that you have come to this meeting to-night, to learn, perhaps for the first time in your life, a new way of serving him *by taking care of his cattle*.

[Before the New-England Assembly, Aug. 31, 1882.]

THE suppression of the slave-trade, the abolition of slavery, the growth of free government, the elevation of labor, the coming-up of woman towards equal rights with man, the greater care for the insane, the improvements in prisons and penitentiaries, the laws enacted and societies formed to protect dumb beasts from cruelty, and now the "*Bands of Mercy*," spreading into churches of all religious denominations and into all grades of schools, to train the children of this, and perhaps of other nations, in thoughts and habits of mercy, — are all indications that the human race is moving upward from a lower to a higher civilization.

What is the pledge of this new order of Christian chivalry?

"*I will try to be kind to all harmless living creatures, and try to protect them from cruel usage.*"

It includes all defenceless *human* as well as animal life, and strikes

at every form of cruelty, whether it be on the cattle-train, the battle-field, or from the intoxicating cup.

The knights of OLD, standing before the altars in those great cathedrals of Europe, swore to rescue the holy sepulchre from the infidel.

We propose to array the knights of NEW,—now in the schools and Sunday schools of all nations,—to fight under the same old banner of the cross; not for a dead sepulchre, but for a living Christianity; a Christianity which shall abolish cruelty and crime and wars, and every form of violence, and usher in that millennial age sung by poets, foretold by prophets, and heard by shepherds on the plains of Judæa.

[From "Our Dumb Animals," January, 1884.]

TRANSPORTATION, SLAUGHTERING, VIVISECTION, AND TREATMENT OF ANIMALS IN WINTER.

We think, first, that

TRANSPORTATION,

as now conducted, is probably the greatest cruelty inflicted on animals in this country. It has been conclusively shown, that hundreds of thousands have annually died on the passage. Probably much of this meat finds its way into our markets. Other hundreds of thousands come out of the cars wounded, tired, thirsty, hungry, and diseased. All this meat comes into our markets. This whole matter is in the control of our great railway corporations, which are controlled by men presumably as humane as the average of their fellow-citizens.

We think the proper course for our humane societies is to employ reliable men to travel over the railroads where abuses are most likely to occur, and carefully gather and report facts. With these facts, let an influential deputation call upon the officers of the roads; and in nine cases out of ten we think orders would be sent out from headquarters which would accomplish more in a fortnight to relieve the sufferings of animals than ten years' litigation.

Second, we think that

SLAUGHTERING,

as now conducted in many parts of our country, probably comes next to transportation, in cruelty. In some, perhaps many, of our large abattoirs, large numbers of animals are compelled to stand waiting their turn, and witness the killing and dressing of those that precede them. Of course many of them are in a frenzy of terror, and in this condition are killed with great cruelty. Now, every animal can

be, and ought to be, slaughtered without foreknowledge, and almost without pain. A large part of the cattle now slaughtered in Massachusetts are killed instantly by a single bullet in the head. We think that all our humane societies should first employ reliable persons to find out and report just how animals are now slaughtered in their respective jurisdictions; and with these facts influential deputations should meet the principal butchers, and consult in regard to the adoption of the most improved methods now practised.

Third, we think

VIVISECTION

is a question to be squarely met. We have seen it stated in newspapers, that one man in Ohio has already taken the lives of nearly three thousand animals in his various experiments; and we have been told by one of the most eminent surgeons of Massachusetts, a professor of surgery, that not one important useful fact has thus far, to his knowledge, been discovered in America by vivisection. What ought our societies to do? It will probably take years to enact laws in this country prohibiting vivisection, and perhaps years before laws can be enacted to limit it. And, after the laws are enacted, what then?

Animals cannot testify, and no man can be made to criminate himself. Under these circumstances it would be extremely difficult to obtain evidence. If our medical men believe that vivisection is essential to medical progress, we think that students would practise it without regard to what they would consider an unwise law; and animals would not be helped.

What can our societies do? We know of no reason why physicians and surgeons should be less humane than other citizens. Some of them, we know, are among the best and noblest of men. A few words against vivisection from the more eminent would, in our judgment, do more to stop it than any law we can enact. I think, therefore, we should call upon them to do all in their power to stop vivisection, or to confine it within the narrowest and most merciful limits. Let us ask their counsel and advice; and, if unscrupulous and unmerciful men of the profession cannot be otherwise controlled, then let us ask a law which shall be approved by the more eminent and humane, and ask them to aid us in enforcing it.

Let our societies in this matter consult the best and most humane of the profession, and, until it can be plainly shown they are in error, act upon their advice. We think this question should not be ignored by our societies, but, on the contrary, that most carefully selected and judicious committees should be appointed to take it in charge.

Fourth,

TREATMENT OF ANIMALS IN WINTER.

Many thousands of cattle die on our Western plains every winter, from starvation and want of shelter. A correspondent of "The New-York Sun," after giving a most painful description of their sufferings, declares that more cruelty is practised there in a single day than in all our cities in a whole year. We know of but one remedy that can reach our Western plains, and that is *humane education*. There are undoubtedly tens of thousands of animals, even in our Eastern cities and towns, kept every winter in a state of semi-starvation, which, as the poor creatures cannot testify, it is almost impossible to prove. Indeed, the very man whom we fine for beating his old horse, which perhaps he bought for five dollars, may half starve him all winter to pay the fine, and we cannot prove it. And this brings me to say, that the only thing we can depend upon, after all, to *effectually* protect animals from cruelty, is *humane education*. For every case of cruelty prevented by prosecution, a thousand at least may be prevented by *humane education*; and the grandest feature of our work is that by which we are now planting our Bands of Mercy, and sending our humane teachings not alone through our own Commonwealth, but to Georgia, Alabama, Texas, Indian Territory, California, and Oregon. Our humane societies are now sowing the seed of a harvest which will one of these days protect not only the birds of the air and beasts of the field, but also human beings as well.

[From June, 1884, "Our Dumb Animals."]

OUR BAND-OF-MERCY BADGE.

DO NOT THINK LIGHTLY OF IT.

It is not expensive. It costs but a few cents. But it is not therefore the less valuable. Some of you have bits of ribbon, locks of hair, little pictures that cost but little: yet when you look at them they bring joy or sadness,—sometimes tears to your eyes, and sometimes hopes as broad as eternity to your hearts.

Our country's flag, looked at one way, is only a bit of bunting; but another, it represents a nation of fifty millions of free men, whose poorest boy may become its foremost citizen.

The cross on which Christ was crucified probably cost in those days but a few pennies; but for more than a thousand years, in and over every cathedral of the world, and wherever on every continent and island of the ocean church-bells have rung and church-spires pointed heavenward, the cross has stood, and now stands,—

“ Towering o’er the wrecks of time,
All the light of sacred story
Gathered round its head sublime.”

Let no one think lightly of a badge which bears such inscriptions as, “ *Glory to God,*” “ *Peace on Earth,*” “ *Good-will to All,*” because it costs but little. It is the symbol of the rising of another Star of Bethlehem to shed healing light on the nations, and on all God’s dumb creatures as well.

I write the above with the hope that teachers will take special care to impress upon their children the value of their badges, — what they mean, and the care which should be taken to preserve them.

(From “Our Dumb Animals,” July, 1882.)

MY CANARY BIRD.

A BALTIMORE lady asks me to say something for caged canary birds kept in the hot sun, neglected and suffering.

I believe that cruelty to a caged bird is a sin in the sight of God; and if those who do it, or permit it, are not somewhere held accountable, there is no such thing as justice.

I have a canary myself. I would not take a thousand dollars for him if I could not get another. I permit him to fly about our rooms several hours a day. I don’t starve him on poor canary-seed; I feed him what I think he would like if he could help himself — crumbs of coarse bread and flour bread, crackers, fruit, lettuce, chickweed; and he takes just what he likes, and refuses what he doesn’t like, and is tough and strong and happy as a bird can be. I have had him now going on three years. He plays with me, comes to my fingers, shoulders, head. I chase him, and he chases me, and sings little songs of triumph when I fail to catch him. I never leave him in the hot sun. I never hang him up in a hot room to suffer and wilt. I never put him in a cold room to shiver. If he were sad I should be sad; and if he should sicken and die, I should shed more tears than I should over some of those who abuse little birds and other so-called dumb creatures. I make him very happy when he is caged, by giving him a little mirror, which I so hang that the sun or lights shall not dazzle him. When I want him to stop singing, I always give him the mirror, and he will stand and look at his pretty self hours together, and keep perfectly quiet.

He sings in the morning his happy song of thanksgiving, and

just before sundown his evening hymn, and sometimes later I hear his soft, sweet notes, as though he were saying his little prayer to his Maker and mine.

As I believe in an omniscient God, without whose knowledge not a sparrow falls to the ground, so I believe that I shall be held accountable for the happiness or unhappiness I may bring into this little bird-life that God has kindly given to make my life happier.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," August, 1884.)

WE HAVE LOST A FRIEND.

THE readers of "Our Dumb Animals," and of the "Twelve Lessons on Kindness," will remember that the editor of this paper has not unfrequently spoken of his canary, — a bird of most beautiful plumage and wonderful melody: so intelligent that it would follow us from room to room, come at our call, and call us in return; stand on our hand as we read the daily morning paper; at other times, on our head, or shoulder, or inkstand when writing; welcome us when we came home, look sad when we went away; play "hide-and-go-seek" with us; sing a remarkable variety of rich notes, mornings, evenings, and through the day; or stop singing, and stand quietly watching us for hours, when with almost or quite human intelligence it seemed to know that our thoughts were otherwise occupied. It filled our home-life with kind words, and acts, and sunshine, and brought happiness to hundreds of others who have known it. But yesterday, in our chamber at the seaside, while Mrs. A.'s back was turned for a minute, a cat stealthily crept into the room, sprang upon her sewing-table, where the bird, which she had just been talking to, was standing, in one instant tore off half its beautiful plumage, and in another rushed with it in her mouth to the attic, and behind timbers, where pursuit was impossible. If the cat had destroyed a thousand dollars' worth of our property, we should have considered the loss comparatively small.

We write these lines with tears in our eyes and sadness in all our hearts.

What there is beyond the dark river, we know not; but we humbly hope this little bird-life, which has brought so much happiness into our home during the past five years, may not have gone out forever.

(From "Our Dumb Animals," August, 1884.)

ONE OF THE BEST FRIENDS OF OUR CAUSE

writes us in warm praise of our little paper, but suggests that possibly, to please some readers, we *give a little too much space to "Bands of Mercy."* We answer, that the object of its editor (now in his sixty-second year) in giving his time, thoughts, labor, and money — summer and winter, Sundays and week-days — with hardly any vacation — to our humane work, *is not* to protect dumb animals or human beings from "the ninety and nine who safely lie in the shelter of the fold," — but to reach the *outside millions*, who, from want of moral and humane influences, are now cruel both to their own and the lower races. If our friend sat in our chair, and read, as we read, the Band-of-Mercy letters coming to our table, she would as soon think of striking "Christ and him crucified" out of her Bible, as of giving a minor place to this great national organization of nearly three thousand branches and two hundred thousand members, whose mottoes are, "*Glory to God," "Peace on Earth," "Kindness to all harmless living creatures."*

(From Lecture on Crime.)

HOW CAN WE STOP WARS?

I ANSWER: I believe it is within the power of the Christian Church to stop almost every war. When the next threatens, let the clergy of all denominations meet in every city and town, and petition Congress to settle the dispute by arbitration.

Let every clergyman on the next Sunday preach a sermon on war, and then circulate in his parish a petition against it. Let great union prayer-meetings be held in all our cities and towns, to pray that the war may be averted; and let Christians of all nations be invited by telegrams to join in that prayer.

Let every Christian wife and mother, when war threatens, wear some emblem of mourning until the danger is past. If these things were done, I think few politicians would care to rise in Congress, or anywhere, to advocate war.

When the united voices of the Christian Church shall demand peace on earth, good-will to men, great armies will be no longer needed, and Christmas chimes will ring out such melodies as the world has never heard.

In this country, I think one of our first steps should be to so amend our Constitution that war shall never be declared except by a ma-

majority vote of the whole nation ; and on that question every wife and mother who has husband or son liable to military duty should be permitted to vote.

.

HOW TO TEACH GOD AND IMMORTALITY.

To teach the children in our public schools about God, tell them of the wonders revealed by the microscope and telescope.

Carry their thoughts to the stars, that move in grand procession across the evening sky, and ask who guides them in their great circles through space without limit and time without end ; tell them of the goodness displayed in flowers that bloom and birds that sing.

Show them the wonderful plan that runs through the whole universe, from the constellations to the animalcule, and ask who was the planner ?

Show them what this wonderful human intellect of ours has done : how it has created the world's libraries and machine-shops, steamers that plough the ocean, astronomical instruments that measure heavenly bodies, grand cathedrals, paintings of Raphael and Michel Angelo, music of Mozart and Beethoven ; and ask who made that intellect ?

How about immortality ?

Suppose you tell them that the greatest scientist we ever had on this continent, Agassiz, believed not only in the immortality of man, but also in some form of future life even for the lower intelligences ; that the sacred books and religious beliefs and recorded spiritual experiences of nearly all nations and ages teach it ; and that, if all these were wanting, the common-sense of mankind would teach that the Power that sustains the universe would not permit the holy saint, martyr, mother, to only share with pirates and murderers a common annihilation.

THE NEW ORDER OF MERCY ;

OR,

CRIME AND ITS PREVENTION.

PAPER BY GEORGE T. ANGELL,

PRESIDENT OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SOCIETY FOR THE PREVENTION OF CRUELTY
TO ANIMALS, PRESIDENT OF THE PARENT BAND OF MERCY, AND DIRECTOR
OF THE AMERICAN SOCIAL SCIENCE ASSOCIATION.

BEFORE THE NATIONAL ASSOCIATION OF SUPERINTENDENTS
OF PUBLIC SCHOOLS,

AT ANNUAL MEETING, WASHINGTON, FEB. 14, 1884.

Published by National Bureau of Education of U. S. Department of the Interior.

As introductory to the paper I am about to read, I would say that the American Bands of Mercy, founded in Boston, July, 1882, have now over 1,000 branches, with over 100,000 members. They are in nearly every State of the Union, and in several of the Territories. They are in schools of all grades, from the primary to the college; and in Sunday schools of all denominations, both Protestant and Roman Catholic. Their object is to teach kindness and mercy to all harmless living creatures, both human and dumb, and such other moral virtues as each band may determine. They are so simple that a boy or girl fourteen years old or younger can, with the instructions we send, form and conduct a band. They cost nothing; as we send to each band formed full instructions, and humane literature sufficient to supply their meetings one year, without cost. They have been indorsed and recommended by the most eminent educators and educational journals of the country. In the city of Cincinnati alone, largely through the active exertions and influence of Dr. J. B. Peaslee,

its superintendent of public schools, nearly 300 bands have been formed since Jan. 1, 1884, with over 30,000 members.

Crime more than doubled in Massachusetts in ten years prior to 1878. During 1865 there were about 10,000 committals to the various prisons of Massachusetts; in 1875, more than 20,000; in 1876, the average number confined there was still higher; in 1877, higher still. In August, 1878, Mr. Frank B. Sanborn, the late president of our National Conference of Charities, stated that the number of convicts in the prisons of the United States was about double what it was in 1871. The report of our Massachusetts prison commissioners for 1880 shows a large increase of crime as compared with 1879. The secretary of that board tells me that a similar increase of crime in 1880 is shown by statistics in other States. In the year ending Sept. 30, 1882, there were 5,803 more committals to Massachusetts prisons than in the preceding year.

The destruction of property by fire in the United States grew from an annual loss in 1868 of about \$35,000,000, to an annual loss in 1878 of nearly \$100,000,000. I have not the later statistics.

As long ago as 1876, our Massachusetts State Board of Charities, in their annual report, used these words: "And now we find that there is hardly a country in the civilized world where atrocious and flagrant crime is so common as in Massachusetts." These are not my words, but the words of our State Board of Charities. I have no reason to suppose Massachusetts worse than other States.

The editor of the Louisville "Courier-Journal," writing of the prevalence of crime, says, in August, 1881, that throughout the State of Kentucky "life seems scarcely more secure than when armed bands of guerrillas swept it from border to border."

Judge Barrows of Maine, in his charge to a jury, January, 1882, said, "In the earlier years of this State, the crime of murder was rare. With a population not much less than now, years went by, and it was not heard of. But within the past nine or ten years, its frequency has been such that it has become a mere nine-days' wonder."

"It is a fact," says the chief justice of the supreme court of Illinois, in an address to the bar of Chicago as far back as November, 1870, "that cannot be denied, that as a people we are undergoing rapid deterioration. Our social, political, and commercial morals are sinking; and day by day we seem to be drifting farther and farther from our ancient anchorage, toward an unknown coast whose atmosphere is laden with poison and death." These are not my words, but the words of the chief justice of the supreme court of Illinois.

I think we are no worse in Massachusetts than they are in other

States. The number of arrests annually made in New-York City alone is about double those made in the whole Commonwealth of Massachusetts. During 1880, 71,479 arrests were made in New-York City. During only nine months, 228 dead bodies which could not be identified were taken from the waters about that city, and buried as unknown.

It is well known that there are now in this country large organized societies of criminals, acted under officers duly elected, bound together by solemn oaths, and controlling large sums of money. "I know," says the late warden of the Massachusetts State Prison, in his testimony before the prison committee of the Massachusetts Legislature, — "I know, of my own knowledge, that there exists in the city of Boston a regularly organized society of criminals, with president, vice-president, secretary, and treasurer. This society has a regular form of admitting members. The prison each graduated from, his offence, with information in regard to the prison, are all recorded. The society discusses the most approved plans for burglary, tools, equipments, etc. They keep a register of the best criminal lawyers, and of the judges of the courts; and they have a fund for mutual support and protection." This is the testimony of the warden of the Massachusetts State Prison. I am told that similar organizations of criminals have been formed in other cities and States.

Our criminals are mostly young men. Out of 415 convicts sentenced to the Massachusetts State Prison in a single year, more than half were born in Massachusetts, and more than half were not twenty-five years old. The average age of convicts in our Massachusetts State Prison was found, some time since, to be only about twenty-four years. The police records of San Francisco, some time since, showed that about three-quarters of those arrested for criminal acts in that city were under twenty years of age; and about one-half of those charged with larceny, burglary, and robbery, were boys or young men not twenty-two years old. In New-York papers of December, 1883, I find that in the court of general sessions of New-York City, Judge Cowing called attention to the alarming increase of crime among young men; ninety per cent of those convicted of burglary and robbery being under twenty-five years of age.

It is not the ignorant alone that fill the ranks of criminals. The chaplain of the Auburn (N.Y.) State Prison said, some time since, that the convicts there constituted one of the most intelligent audiences he ever addressed. Out of 1,368 prisoners, 1,182 had received a greater or less education in our colleges, academies, public schools, and elsewhere. The secretary of our Massachusetts board of prison

commissioners assured me, May 12, 1881, that what is stated in regard to the intelligence of convicts in Auburn prison will hold true in regard to the intelligence of convicts in various other prisons.

It is not the uneducated alone that are in training to commit crime. In the various Boston papers, some time since, appeared the following telegram: "Some two hundred students of — College got drunk on Thursday night, and behaved so outrageously at the Hahnemann fair, that all the ladies left, and the police were powerless to preserve order. After leaving the fair, they raided about a dozen lager-beer saloons, and fighting, riot, and scandalous behavior continued in the neighborhood till daylight; the police being afraid to meddle with them." In the Boston "Journal" of Jan. 25, 1882, I find that twenty-three students of another college had just been indicted by the grand jury, and arrested for crime. These are not exceptional cases. I could quote various other colleges as well, to show the spirit of lawlessness which prevails among large numbers of our educated young men.

The facilities for committing crime are constantly increasing. I am assured, on what I believe to be entirely reliable authority, that a machine has been recently invented, costing only \$5, with which the skilful burglar can open the strongest safe in any vault of our cities, in thirty minutes, without noise.

A Nihilist lecturer recently stated to a Boston audience, that there were now about four hundred schools in Europe (he did not say how many in America) whose only object is to teach the use of explosives; that about sixty tons of tri-nitroglycerine, having ninety-three times the power of gunpowder, are now concealed, ready for use; that he carried dynamite always in his pocket; and two ounces of an explosive he had, put at the entrance of the Tremont Temple, where he was lecturing, would destroy the life of every person in that building.

Science is making wonderful progress. Steamers can be blown to atoms in mid-ocean, railroad-trains be wrecked, safety-vaults and magnificent piles of architecture changed in a moment to shapeless ruins. It is perfectly certain that the criminal classes of the future are going to know all about these things; and it is becoming a most momentous question, How are we going to stop the growth of crime?

It is certain that education of the intellect alone will not do it: that only gives increased power. The churches and Sunday schools alone cannot stop it, for they do not reach the great masses who never attend them. In some States not more than half the people attend the churches, and in some States probably not more than a quarter; and only a similar proportion of children attend the Sunday schools.

Is this state of things, under present influences, likely to grow better? See the hordes of immigrants pouring in upon us from all nations of the civilized world, all to become voters. See the innumerable millions of China and the East, that cannot be much longer kept out. Add these chances to present statistics; and then figure it out, if you can, that this continent is not to become the great battleground of the world, between the powers of good and evil.

I see it stated in the papers, that one great secret organization, the "Knights of Labor," numbers already nearly two millions of members, all combined to resist, and if necessary wage war on, capital, which they declare is waging war on them. Are these controversies to be settled in the future humanely by arbitration and the ballot, or how are they to be settled? This is going to be a great question before long, and it may be much sooner than we expect. Four hundred schools in Europe, we are told, are teaching the use of dynamite, and its apostles are not few nor far between.

If we drift into another civil war, where will be found these great and growing criminal classes who never enter church or Sunday school, who believe property should be divided or destroyed? Will they, or will they not, come to the front, as they did in the French Revolution? And what is the remedy? Pass more stringent laws, perhaps you say. How are you going to pass them? and how are you going to enforce them, when more or less men on every jury (and it may be, some of your judges even) are in sympathy with crime?

It was ascertained some time since, that, on the voting-lists of the city of Boston, were the names of more than six thousand persons who had been convicted of crime. Put more work into the Sunday schools, perhaps you say. That's all very well; but what are you going to do with the millions that never enter the Sunday schools?

I do not seek to disparage our present great and powerful instrumentalities of good, and the army of noble and self-sacrificing men and women engaged in them. I only seek to show, that, in spite of them all, crime is increasing far beyond our increase of population, and seems likely to increase still more in the future, and that new measures must be adopted. What can we do? I answer, In my judgment, there is only one way. We must go straight to the foundations, and begin with the children in our public schools; and that will be the quickest way to reach the parents. If we want to stop lawlessness and crime, we must begin with the children in our public schools. Nearly all the criminals of the future, the thieves, burglars, incendiaries, and murderers, are now in our public schools; and with

them, the greater criminals who commit national crimes. They are in our public schools now, and we are educating them. We can mould them now if we will. To illustrate the power of education: We know that you may make the same boy Protestant, Roman Catholic, or Mahometan. It is simply a question of education. You may put into his little hand, as first toys, whips and guns and swords; or you may teach him, as the Quakers do, that war and cruelty are crimes. You may teach him to shoot the little song-bird in springtime, with its nest full of young; or you may teach him to feed the bird, and spare its nest. You may go into the schools now with book, picture, song, and story, and make neglected boys merciful; or you may let them drift until, as men, they have become sufficiently lawless and cruel to throw your railway-trains off the track, place dynamite under your dwelling-houses or public buildings, assassinate your President, burn half your city, or, as Nihilistic leaders, involve the nation in civil war. Is it not largely, if not wholly, a question of education?

I say, then, that our remedy against the lawlessness and crime now so rapidly growing in this country lies in the humane — which will be found to include also the moral — education of the children, and that this is also the shortest road to reach the parents.

For the purpose of humanely educating the children of this nation, was founded in Boston, on the 28th of July, 1882, the American Band of Mercy. Among its earliest members were the Governor of Massachusetts; the Mayor of Boston; the Chief-justice of our Commonwealth, and other judges; the Roman Catholic Archbishop of Boston, who has caused one to be established in his cathedral, with about 1,500 members, and has given us permission to establish them in all the Sunday and parochial schools of his diocese; the leading editors of our religious and educational papers; and several hundreds of clergymen of all denominations, Protestant and Roman Catholic; and it has now, in something over a year, over 1,000 branches, reaching from the Atlantic to the Pacific Coast and from the Gulf of St. Lawrence to the Gulf of Mexico, and numbering over 100,000 members. These branches have been established in Sunday schools of all denominations, both Protestant and Roman Catholic, and in schools of all grades, from the primary to the college.

Its badge is a five-pointed star, on which are the mottoes, "Glory to God," "Peace on earth," "Good-will to all;" and on the five points of the star the words, "Kindness to all harmless living creatures." Its cards of membership have a beautiful picture of the "signing of the pledge;" with these lines, —

For lo! the days are hastening on,
By prophet bards foretold,
When, with the ever-circling years,
Comes round the age of gold;
When peace shall over all the earth
Its ancient splendors fling,
And the whole world give back the song
That now the angels sing.

Its pledge is : " I will try to be kind to all harmless living creatures, both human and dumb, and will try to protect them from cruel usage." It is thus both an order of mercy and an order of chivalry. Its object is in all possible ways to encourage its members to good, generous, noble, and merciful lives and deeds. Whenever a brave, kind word needs to be said, say it ; whenever a brave, kind act needs to be done, do it. It aims to use at its meetings every song, poem, picture, and story which will promote the objects for which it was founded ; and, when practicable, endeavors, by public Band-of-Mercy concerts and otherwise, to reach all outside whom it can reach and influence. Its methods of organization are so simple that any boy or girl of ordinary intelligence, fourteen years old, can organize a Band of Mercy. Its exercises occupy such part of school, or Sunday school, or other time, as each band for itself arranges. It costs nothing ; for all that it requires is the simple pledge, nothing more. To be sure, it has a membership book for each band that wants one, which costs six cents ; beautiful imitation gold and silver badge pins for those who want them, which cost eight cents ; ribbon badges, which cost four cents ; and handsome cards of membership, which cost two cents. Some seventy-thousand of these cards and badges have been already sent out. But they are not necessary : all that is required is simply the pledge. It sends, without cost, to each band formed of over forty members (1) an order of exercises, and full information as to what to do, and how to do it ; (2) ten very interesting lessons on kindness to animals, full of stories and instruction on that subject, and which have already gone to over twenty thousand teachers of public and private schools, and are now being introduced into Sunday schools ; and (3) a copy for one year of its monthly paper, " Our Dumb Animals," filled with interesting anecdotes and other matter, encouraging kindness both to animals and human beings. It sends also to each band leaflets containing Band-of-Mercy hymns and songs, adapted to popular music and suitable for both school and Sunday-school exercises. All these are sent without cost. To every teacher who forms a band of twenty or more, it sends, in addition to these, a beautiful badge-pin, without cost.

It is not the intention to have a word said or quoted in any band that will give offence to any religious denomination, or to require the teaching of any thing but kindness and protection for the weak ; but it is the hope of its founders, that teachers and officers of all bands will, so far as practicable, endeavor to inculcate not only thoughts and habits of mercy, but also a firm belief in the Infinite Ruler of the Universe, upon whose mercy we depend. This can be done, without in any manner interfering with sectarian beliefs, by showing how the whole natural world is full of the evidences of his wisdom, power, and goodness.

It is our earnest hope, also, that teachers and officers of all bands will, so far as practicable, inculcate the great doctrine of immortality. We think it can be shown, without conflicting with the religious views of any denomination, that the sacred books and religious beliefs and recorded spiritual experiences of all ages and nations teach it ; and that, if all these evidences were wanting, still the common-sense of mankind would show the necessity of another life to right the wrongs of this one, and that a power so great and good as is revealed in this universe would never permit saints, martyrs, and holy mothers to simply share with pirates and murderers a common annihilation. We think that any system of teaching mercy, which ignores the merciful God, and a future life in which the wrongs of this one shall be righted, must be defective and unsatisfactory.

It will not be difficult to teach with mercy, also, in similar ways, peace, temperance, truth, honor, honesty. We think it will be found on reflection, that mercy includes them all, and that no man can be truly merciful without them. But we require only the pledge, "I will try to be kind to all harmless creatures, and will try to protect them from cruel usage." And we have abundant evidence that the teaching of this alone will prevent both cruelty and crime.

The experience of French and English schools during many years has shown that children taught kindness to animals only, become not only more kind to animals, but also more kind to one another. This matter has been deemed so important, that not only are regular lessons on this subject now given in over five thousand schools of France, and the minister of public instruction has ordered publications teaching it to be circulated in French schools, but also in those schools have been formed large numbers of societies of youth and children to protect the lower animals from cruelty.

In one department of France alone, there are now about five hundred of these societies ; and in some of the Roman Catholic dioceses of France children are not admitted to first communion until they promise to be kind to animals. For the same object, large societies of youth

and children have been formed in Germany, Denmark, Russia, Switzerland, and Great Britain. It is probable that more than a hundred thousand English school-children are to-day members of these associations. In proof of the established fact that this teaching prevents not only cruelty, but also crime, in England public attention has been called to the fact that out of about seven thousand children carefully taught kindness to animals, during a series of years, in one English public school, not one has ever been arrested for any criminal offence. It was ascertained some time since, by inquiry in American prisons, that, out of two thousand convicts inquired of, only twelve had any pet animal during their childhood.

We know that simply teaching kindness in our Bands of Mercy — to be more merciful to the aged, weak, and suffering ; to feed the song-birds, and spare their nests ; sprinkle ashes on icy streets, that men and horses may not fall ; put the blankets that have blown off horses on again, and tuck them under the harness ; kill fish as soon as they are caught, as Agassiz taught his pupils ; protect the useful toad ; avoid treading upon the useful and harmless worm, even — will have a mighty influence to prevent many from becoming criminals, and make them good, merciful, and law-abiding citizens. I could easily fill an hour with anecdotes illustrating the power of teaching kindness to the lower creatures ; and, for illustrations of the power of teaching kindness to the higher, we have only to look at the histories of the Quakers and Moravians.

Indeed, if all the world were Quakers and Moravians, what would become of the prisons, and what would become of armies, navies, and fortifications ? The Quaker colony of Pennsylvania required for seventy years, for its protection against Indians, only a few constables. That was the fruit of humane education.

Is it not possible to educate our children just as humanely, without making them Quakers or Moravians ? I have heard the question asked, “ Will not this humane education unfit our boys for soldiers ? ” I answer, that a boy who has been trained to protect a dumb beast from cruelty will fight, if need be, none the less bravely for his home and country. There were no braver men in our last war, North or South, than those that went from our most cultured homes. There have been no braver men or women in any age than those sons and daughters of mercy, who, since that war, went down into the yellow-fever hospitals of the South, to nurse the sick, and comfort and cheer the dying.

But suppose a band should teach only one thing, — kindness to the lower creatures, those that cannot speak for themselves. Saying

nothing of the increased protection to animals, when you are teaching children to love and do acts of kindness for these creatures which the poorest boys and girls are meeting forty times a day in the streets, and having opportunities of doing little acts of kindness to, you are teaching what will bring a whole world of new happiness into the whole future lives of the children.

I shall never forget seeing on the Capitol grounds at Richmond, Va., tame gray squirrels running over the grounds, and feeding from the hands of the children; and I told the people whom I addressed there, truly, as I believe, that those squirrels were worth their weight in gold to the city of Richmond, for the kindness they put into the hearts of the children. I have in my own home a little bird that weighs less than one ounce after dinner; yet he brings into my home a happiness that for thousands of dollars I would not lose. He follows me from room to room; flies to my head, my shoulders, my fingers; stands on my table, and watches me as I write. In the morning he sings his little songs of thanksgiving; about sundown, his evening hymn; and later, at intervals, I hear soft, sweet notes, which I love to think may be his little prayers to his Maker and mine. It is only one little bird, weighing less than an ounce: yet I know that he makes my life both happier and better.

And I could easily fill an hour with the testimony of men and women of almost every position in life, — from the poor, sick colored man at Louisville, Ky., who, when told that to enter the city hospital he must abandon his dog, declared with tears in his eyes that the dog was the only friend he had in the world, and he would rather die with him in the streets of Louisville than abandon him, — up to Sir Walter Scott, and Sir Edwin Landseer; and Petrarch, and Cardinal Wolsey, and Richelieu; and Daniel Webster, who, just before he died, asked that all his cattle might be driven to his window, that he might see them for the last time; and a thousand more like these, who might be cited to show how millions of lives have been, and other millions may be, made happier by a love for God's lower creatures.

And then comes the influence of this teaching on crime. I am sometimes asked, "Why do you spend so much of your time and money in talking about kindness to animals, when there is so much cruelty to men?" And I answer, "We are working at the roots. Every humane publication, every lecture, every step in doing or teaching kindness to them, is a step to prevent crime," — a step in promoting the growth of those qualities of heart which will elevate human souls, even in the dens of sin and shame, and prepare the

way for the coming of peace on earth and good-will to men. There are hundreds of thousands of parents among the depraved and criminal classes of this country, whom no child can "be taught to love," or ought to be. There are hundreds of thousands of homes where the name of the Almighty is never heard except in words of blasphemy. But there is not a child in one of those homes that may not be taught in our public schools to feed the birds, and pat the horses, and enjoy making happy all harmless creatures it meets on the street, and so be doing acts of kindness forty times a day, which will make it not only happier, but better and more merciful in all the relations of life.

Standing before you as the advocate of the lower races, I declare, what I believe cannot be gainsaid, — that just so soon and so far as we pour into all our schools the songs and poems and literature of mercy towards these lower creatures, just so soon and so far shall we reach the roots not only of cruelty, but of crime.

A short time since, I was written to by order of an association of the leading citizens of one of our largest Western cities; and the question was asked, "What can we do to stop the growth of crime?" I answered, "Form a Band of Mercy in every public school of your city as quickly as you can." So you will reach the children at once; and through them, and their cards, badges, and humane literature, you will reach also the parents.

My friends, have you any thing better? It costs nothing. It opens, in every school where it is formed, a door or channel through which we can pour into the school our humane literature and education. It can do no harm. It may do infinite good, not only in this generation, but in the great future, when we shall have ceased from our labors.

No man can tell the influence that may go out from even the smallest band, to bless our country and to bless the world. Millions are expended in building monuments in our cemeteries. I know of no way in which any man or woman can build a better monument than by founding a band or bands of mercy, dedicated to the glory of God and the highest welfare of his creatures, both human and dumb.

Mr. RICHARDS introduced the following, which was adopted: —

Resolved, That we heartily approve of the American Bands of Mercy, and welcome their introduction into the public schools of our country to aid in the moral education of our people.

[From "Our Dumb Animals," October, 1884.]

SENTIMENT, SENTIMENTAL.

Some of our friends most deeply interested in animal-protection societies are frequently charged with being *sentimental*. We admit it. What is *sentiment*? "*Thought prompted by feeling.*" And *sentimental*? "*Having sensibility or feeling.*"

Love of God is a sentiment.

Love of man is a sentiment.

A desire to relieve and prevent suffering, — that is a sentiment.

To protect the weak, bind up the broken-hearted, defend the defenceless, raise the down-trodden, give liberty to the enslaved, — these are all sentiments.

Women have died in hospitals, and men on battle-fields, and martyrs at the stake, and as the flames curled around them have sung hymns of praise, all for sentiment.

Some of us remember the spring of 1861, when the telegram came of the firing on Fort Sumter, and then our President's call for help to save Washington. We think the telegram came in the afternoon or evening; and the next morning at nine o'clock a regiment of our Massachusetts citizens stood in front of the State House, ready to start. That was sentiment. Next day they were fired on in Baltimore, and Governor Andrew sent that telegram which drew tears from thousand of eyes: —

To the Mayor of Baltimore:

I pray you to cause the bodies of our Massachusetts soldiers dead in Baltimore, to be immediately laid out, preserved in ice, and tenderly sent forward by express to me. All expenses will be paid by this Commonwealth.

That was sentiment.

And then there came such a blaze of sentiment, that it illuminated the whole State, from Massachusetts Bay to the Berkshire Hills, as regiment after regiment of our brave boys went down into the swamps and wildernesses to die for the preservation of the unity of their country.

Thank God for sentiment!

When the nation loses it, we shall cease to be a nation. And, thank God, that sentiment is now being directed into channels which lead to peace and not war, kindness and not cruelty.



OUR AMERICAN HUMANE EDUCATION SOCIETY AND THIS AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

THE American Humane Education Society was the outgrowth of a "*Mission Fund*," so called, consisting of sums of money sent to me by humane persons in various parts of our country, to be used for the promotion of humane education in such ways as I might deem best.

Several thousands of dollars were given me in this way for this purpose, and were used with great success in circulating humane literature, information, and education in different parts of our country.

It became clear to my mind that if, from any cause, I should be compelled to cease from my labors, the "*Missionary Fund*" would end, and that it was of great importance to organize a *Humane Society* which should perpetuate and increase the work when I should leave it.

For this purpose I applied to the Massachusetts Legislature in the winter of 1888 and 1889, and the Legislature kindly granted me an act of incorporation, under which the "*American Humane Education Society*" has power to hold half a million of dollars free from taxation.

Among its directors are, *Hon. Henry O. Houghton*, senior partner of the great publishing house of Houghton, Mifflin & Company; *Hon. Edmund H. Bennett*, dean of the Boston University Law School; *Hon. George White*, judge of probate; *Hon. Daniel Needham*, president of the New England Agricultural Society; *Hon. Henry B. Hill*, a prominent and well-known citizen of Boston; *Geo. T. Angell*, *Mrs. William Appleton*, *Mrs. Robert Treat Paine*, *Miss Sarah J. Eddy*, *Mrs. Samuel C. Cobb*, *Miss Florence Lyman*, *Miss Veronica Dwight*.

Under the constitution, which I prepared with great care, *the directors hold office for life*. When one dies the survivors elect another to fill his or her place.

I was elected president, and *Hon. Henry O. Houghton* treasurer.

This organization has been sending "*Our Dumb Animals*," monthly, to about ten thousand American editors, also furnishing outfits, and taking charge of the branches of our "*Parent American Band of Mercy*," of which have now been formed over twelve thousand branches in every State and Territory but Alaska, and containing probably from half a million to a million members.

It has printed and caused to be printed nearly a million copies of "*Black Beauty*" in English, German, Dutch, Italian, Spanish, and Swedish languages, and is now aiding in its translation and distribution in French, Arabic, Hindostani, and Telugu.

It has offered a prize of a thousand dollars for the best equestrian drama of "*Black Beauty*," which it hopes may be seen by hundreds of thousands in this and other countries.

It is now offering three prizes of two hundred dollars each for the best and most useful stories of not less than one hundred "*Black Beauty*" pages, on (1) *The kind and cruel treatment of domestic animals and birds in our Southern States and Territories.* (2) *The kind and cruel treatment of domestic animals and birds in our Western States and Territories.* (3) *The kind and cruel treatment of animals and birds in our Northern States.*

Among its work has been also the offering a prize of one hundred dollars to all the college students of America for the best essay on "*The Effect of Humane Education on the Prevention of Crime*," and sending to all their libraries humane publications, and to the students themselves some seventy thousand copies of condensed humane information; the offering to all American editors a similar prize of three hundred dollars for a similar essay, and sending to them all copies of condensed humane information; the offering of two prizes of two hundred and fifty dollars each for the best essays on vivisection, which have been sent to thousands of American editors and physicians.

Also the employing of missionaries and forming "*Humane Societies*" and thousands of "*Bands of Mercy*" in various Southern and Western States and Territories.

These are some of its plans already accomplished, and it has still larger ones for the future, if kind Providence shall give it power to carry them out.

Some years ago, when I arrived at the age of sixty, I wrote this volume of autobiographical sketches, which, at the personal cost to myself of about five hundred dollars, I had printed, and electrotyped so that it might be used, if thought best, after I had passed off the stage.

Recently it occurred to me, from opinions expressed, that a wide publication of these sketches in cheap form may be profitable to our "*American Humane Education Society*."

Accordingly I transferred the electrotypes plates to the society, and had two thousand copies printed from them, some four hundred of which, sent out at a cost to the society of about twenty-five dollars, brought back in a few days gifts to the amount of more than fourteen times the cost, and many letters speaking of the deep interest of readers, and expressing the earnest hope that they may be widely circulated,

Various autobiographies have been recently written and *sold at large profit to their writers.*

Frances E. Willard has given the profits of hers to the "*Woman's Christian Temperance Union.*"

I desire to give the profits of mine to the "*American Humane Education Society,*" with this difference, *that while other autobiographies have been sold, I prefer to have mine given away,* trusting to the kind generosity of those who receive them to send what they can to *aid our "American Humane Education Society's" humane work now,* and hoping they will so provide for it in their wills, that when I have passed off the stage it may still live and be a great power for good over this whole continent and the world.

The cost of this book *to those who care to pay for it, is six cents* per copy at our offices, *ten cents* when sent by mail. It contains 164 pages and two photographs of its writer.

GEO. T. ANGELL,

President of the American Humane Education Society, the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the Parent American Band of Mercy, 19 Milk Street, Boston.

BOSTON, March 1, 1892.



SERIOUS THOUGHTS—IN OUR 75th YEAR.

We assure our friends that while we do have a multitude of happy thoughts over the wonderful growth of our humane work, we do also have some very serious ones when we realize how vastly it is needed not only in our own State and country but throughout the entire world, and particularly in our own country on whose progress in civilization and humanity depends so largely the hope of all nations.

Well did Longfellow write

*Humanity with all its fears,
With all the hopes of future years,
Is hanging breathless on thy fate.*

ADDITION TO OUR AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

1892 to October, 1897.

As the above book, made up to 1892, is quite large enough we cannot add another fifty pages to bring it up to 1897, but will simply say that the past five years have witnessed a wonderful growth of our work.

Our "Bands of Mercy" have grown from *over eleven thousand to nearly thirty thousand* with well up toward two millions of members.

The circulation of "*Black Beauty*" in our own and European and several Asiatic languages, is now probably *over two millions copies*—our prize story, "*Beautiful Joe*" *over two hundred thousand copies*—our various prize stories and new publications *hundreds of thousands more*—our offers for *prize stories, essays, plans and evidence to convict* too numerous to mention—"Our Dumb Animals" sent *every month* to [*among others*] not only nearly all professional men and a multitude of others in our own state, but also to all members of congress, and *every month* to all Presidents of American Universities and Colleges and *all newspapers and magazines in North America north of Mexico*.

Any one who will undertake to read our annual reports of the last five years, published in each May number of "*Our Dumb Animals*," and the reports of the missionaries of our *American Humane Education Society*, North, South, East and West, will get a bird's eye view of a growth which to properly estimate would require the reading of our paper from January, 1892, to the date of this writing, October, 1897.

Four times our life has come near ending—twice by drowning—once by the falling of a heavy block of ice from a high building—and last in January, 1894, by double pneumonia, from which the eminent specialist called in consultation declared that *our recovery was beyond hope*.

The following, which appeared in March, 1894, "*Our Dumb Animals*" [while we were still unable to leave our home], tells the story :

THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH.

“Since last addressing our kind friends we have passed through the valley of the shadow of death, and but for the Infinite Goodness, would now be lying beneath the turf on a little hillside of Mount Auburn.

On January 6th, out of a perfectly clear sky of unusual good health, suddenly came upon us, without warning, like a black cyclone, ‘*the grippe*,’ and in a few hours, bereft of reason, attacked by pneumonia in both lungs, under the care of two physicians who thought our case almost hopeless, we lay panting and struggling for breath and life.

Our life has been spared, for how much longer we cannot tell, to carry on the battle to which it is gladly devoted.

We recognize that it is largely a battle of this world, to be fought as heretofore with worldly weapons, but if our friends should at any time hereafter sometimes think that our armor seems to resemble in some respects, somewhat more than heretofore, the panoply of a higher existence, they may know that through the long days and nights, when our life hung trembling in the balance, thoughts have come to us which can never be forgotten until our final call by the angelus bells of eternity to pass from labor *perhaps* to perpetual adoration and prayer.

Nothing has touched us more deeply during our sickness than when told that the young ladies in one of our large educational institutions were in their prayer-meetings asking the Almighty to spare our life.

To all who in this time of our great trial and danger have remembered us in their thoughts and prayers we can only say, God bless you—God bless you all.

Some people do not believe in the efficacy of prayer.

On the other hand *millions on millions on millions* of the holiest and best men and women of all ages, from the dawn of civilization to the present time, have believed as fully in the *efficacy* of prayer as they have in their own existence.

The happiest hours of a large part of the life of our own good mother were the two hours which she gave daily to silent, secret prayer, and you might as well have tried to convince her that the sun, moon and stars stood still in the heavens as to convince her that the Almighty did not listen to prayer.

We would be glad to have not only the prayers of all our personal

friends and societies and 'Bands of Mercy,' but of all the good, both living and dead, who have power to pray."

Both our physicians thought our recovery almost a miracle — the older said that out of 375 persons in our condition at one time, he would have expected 374 to have died.

Out of many kind letters received during and immediately after our great peril, we will only give the following extracts :

From a friend in North Carolina, "Oh, that his life may be spared!" "*How many are praying for this.*"

From another, "*How many prayers were put up for your recovery you will never know.*"

From one of Boston's most honored citizens, "*You have had my prayers.*"

From the wife of the Bishop of Maryland, "God made the shadow of death to pass over him," "*thousands have prayed for him.*"

"The Lord heareth *the prayer* of the righteous."—*Proverbs* xv : 29.

"The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous and *his ears are open to their cry.*"—*Psalms* xxxiv : 15.

"The *fervent prayer* of the righteous availeth much."—*James* v : 16.

"*The prayer of faith* shall save him that is sick, and the Lord shall raise him up."—*James* v : 15.

WAR WITH ENGLAND ABOUT THE VENEZUELA BOUNDARY.

[*From February, 1896, Our Dumb Animals.*]

READY TO FIGHT THE WHOLE WORLD.

As we understand it, *Great Britain* now owns from our northern boundary to the North Polar regions, *about one-half our continent*, also a considerable number of islands on our coast, and some of the West India Islands are also owned by *Spain, France, Holland, Denmark and Sweden*, and considerable tracts of land near *Venezuela* in *British, Dutch and French Guiana* belong to those *three nations*.

If we understand rightly the position proposed in our U. S. Senate no one of these powers, *or all combined*, is to be hereafter permitted to take or purchase a single additional acre of land in either North or South America clear down to Patagonia and Cape Horn.

If any or all of these nations dare to disregard this order, then we propose to go to war.

In other words, we stand ready to fight the whole civilized world and perhaps also China and Japan. Well — before we begin hadn't we better spend five hundred millions of dollars on our coast defences, and another five hundred millions in establishing a great army and navy.

We see by the newspapers that the owners of our lake steamers have held a meeting and offered them all to the Government in case of war with Great Britain, *the object being, of course, to attack, capture, and destroy Canadian towns and property.*

We also see, in our evening paper of Jan. 21st, that General McAlpin of New York, says that *in twelve hours* he can start the entire National Guard of that State.

Start for where, and what? Why, of course, *to murder our peaceful brother Christians — Protestant and Catholic, in Canada* — and all about a boundary line of a strip of wild land down in South America.

We also see by the newspapers that General Flagler, chief of our U. S. artillery, proposes a line of fortifications from Ogdensburg to Duluth [about 2,000 miles.]

We would suggest to the General that while these are being constructed we might at the same time be building a Chinese wall along our whole Canadian line from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and put on the top of it a double-track railroad for the conveyance of troops; or, still better, why not blow up Niagara Falls, empty all the great lakes into the Atlantic Ocean and so set forever at rest the cost of these great fortifications?

But in the mean time, how would it work to spend two or three millions in trying to humanely educate our American people?

GEO. T. ANGELL.

SEPULTURE OF THE LIVING.

[*From July, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

As our readers know, we have written much and done much in *petitioning the Legislatures of all our States* on the above subject. We cut the following from the *Boston Transcript* of June 12th, 1897, copied from *The Arena*:—

“My own observation, pursued for a number of years, prepares me to assert that in this country one person each week is buried alive. *This is the mildest statement possible*, since it refers only to the cases where bodies are exhumed, *indubitable traces of life in the grave* being detected and the facts reported in the public press. When we consider that *hardly one in 1000 of the bodies buried is ever again examined*, when we consider that *weekly one of the few examined* is found to have been buried alive, we are appalled at the awful possibilities—aye, *the awful realities*—as to the extent of living sepulture.”

We have suggested as a prevention of the above the formation of Insurance Companies in all our cities [or branches of existing Life Insurance Companies] which shall, in proper buildings, keep with care all bodies of persons supposed to have deceased until the *beginning of decay* shall make death certain.

If we had the personal means to do it we would establish one at once in our own city.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

DAVID WAS A VERY LITTLE FELLOW WHEN COMPARED WITH GOLIATH.

[*From July, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

Many years ago, *Commodore Marston*, in command of our navy at Fortress Monroe during our Civil War, told us the thrilling story how the great ironclad “*Merrimac*,” sailing out of Norfolk (Virginia) harbor, sank our frigate, “*The Cumberland*,” with all on board—and how he ordered all other vessels to put to sea the next morning—how Fortress Monroe and the Norfolk navy-yard, and Baltimore, Washington and Philadelphia, and *quite possibly the fortunes of the whole war*, were at the mercy of that ironclad vessel, and how in the darkness of the anxious night that followed the sinking of the “*Cum-*

berland" a light was seen out at sea coming nearer and nearer until at last the little "*Monitor*," first of its kind (*built only as an experiment, and not to be accepted by the government unless it proved a success*), came in.

As the old Commodore related how that little "*Monitor*" won the battle and perhaps saved the unity of our nation, it did not seem a great stretch of faith to believe that *the invisible power which controls the destinies of nations sent it just at the right time to turn the scale in favor of the Union.*

David was a very little fellow when compared with *Goliath*, and our little monthly, "*Our Dumb Animals*," with its protests and arguments against war and every form of cruelty, makes small show beside the great dailies of some of our large cities, but going as it does every month into every newspaper office north of Mexico, it has already caused the establishment in our own and foreign lands of nearly thirty thousand "*Bands of Mercy*," and the circulation in our own and foreign languages of more than two millions copies of "*Black Beauty*,"—and it may be that under the same Divine guidance it is destined to prove a far more important instrumentality for the good of our nation and the world than some of its readers now imagine.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

EIGHTY THOUSAND.

[From August, 1897, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

Last month we printed *eighty thousand* copies of "*Our Dumb Animals*," and sent *twenty-five thousand* packages of our humane publications [*weighing nearly three tons*] to the great convention of our "*National Educational Association*," at Milwaukee, Wisconsin, which was attended by about *twenty thousand* teachers from all parts of our country.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

A MAGNIFICENT SUCCESS.

[From August, 1897, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

The distribution of about *twenty-five thousand* packages of our humane literature at the great National Meeting of Teachers [*some twenty thousand in all*] at Milwaukee, Wisconsin, has resulted [*as we thought it would*] in a magnificent success.

It has cost money — but there has never been anything to compare with it in the march of humane education *in this country or any other since the world began*—a chief marshal and thirty assistant marshals, all wearing the beautiful new ribbon, gold-imprinted badges of our *American Humane Education Society*, attended to their distribution — not a single package was thrown away or wasted — and they have gone and are now going out as missionaries all over our country to tell of our “Bands of Mercy” and to proclaim the gospel of peace on earth and good will to every creature, both human and dumb.

“Praise God from whom all blessings flow,
Praise *Him* all creatures here below.”

GEO. T. ANGELL.

PERSONAL OPINIONS

[FOR WHICH WE HAVE GIVEN REASONS] IN RECENT NUMBERS OF
“OUR DUMB ANIMALS.”

[*From September, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

- (1) That the [so-called] Monroe doctrine is a humbug.
- (2) That Great Britain has just as good right to buy Cuba from Spain — [or anything else she wants] without consulting us as we had to buy Alaska from Russia without consulting her.
- (3) That as all the great powers of Europe have larger armies and navies than we have and as we have two enormous sea-coasts [separated by a continent] to defend, unless we want to lose the gold mines of Alaska and pay perhaps a thousand millions of dollars for ransom of our large cities, we had better attend diligently to our own business, and treat all other nations with due respect.
- (4) That the talk of lots of our congressmen is as silly as the proposition of the head of the New York militia to attack Canada, and of General Flagler of our U. S. Army to blow up the Welland Canal and establish a chain of defensive fortifications from Ogdensburg to Duluth — and all are as silly as a proposition to build a Chinese wall between ourselves and the British possessions, reaching from the Atlantic to the Pacific, or blow up Niagara Falls and empty the great lakes into the Atlantic ocean.

(5) That we have a lot of *old politicians* who seem anxious to get us into a war with somebody about something, in which the *young men* would have to do all the fighting and get maimed, wounded and killed.

(6) That war is exactly what General Sherman called it, "*Hell on earth*," and the politicians who are trying to get us into it ought to be locked up in lunatic asylums, or put to hard work in state prisons.

(7) That [as we have often suggested] there is plenty of employment for all our unemployed men on levees, canals, public roads and other much needed internal improvements, and plenty of money under a proper system of taxation to pay for it.

(8) *That if Christian churches would do their duty there would never be another war between Christian nations.*

GEO. T. ANGELL.

IN OUR OPINION.

[*From September, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

In our opinion it is as certain as the rising of the sun that the *tremendous accumulations* of capital in this country in a few hands *must in some way be stopped*.

It may come peacefully and humanely through the ballot [and that is what we with our *American Humane Education Society* and nearly 30,000 "Bands of Mercy" are striving for], *or it will come* through one of the most fearful revolutions of which we have any record in human history.

These enormous accumulators of wealth may plan through jingo politicians and the press and legislatures and congress [*which they so largely own*] to find some excuse for raising a great standing army and navy to protect them — but the poorest boys in America are so educated that it will not operate as in foreign countries, where the masses are less intelligent.

There is a *tremendous conflict* between capital and labor constantly threatening our country.

It must be settled either peacefully *or terribly*, and he is no true patriot or friend of humanity who ignores *the necessity of humane education*, and cries *peace, peace* — when there is no peace.

[From September, 1897, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

* * * * *

But then, we remember very well when our new prison was built on a *country farm*, near a heavily-wooded country at Concord — no police — no navy-yard marines — no anybody to call upon in case of emergency — how our Prison Commissioners [or whoever had charge of the business], with a wisdom only surpassed by that of some of our jingo senators at Washington, advertised our Boston prison *for sale*.

We wrote the Governor and the press, and the advertisement was withdrawn and the Commonwealth saved hundreds of thousands of dollars by its withdrawal.

If our Legislature, instead of voting large sums to the erection of monuments to *defunct politicians*, would give the money to our *American Humane Education Society*, to be expended in forming "Bands of Mercy" in every public school of the state, we might be able to greatly lessen the number of future murders, and perhaps save the Commonwealth a million of dollars or two, which seem likely to be soon wanted for another prison.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

THE POWER OF MONEY.

[From September, 1897, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

Everybody knows the power of money—in politics—with the press—in the election of Congressmen and State Legislatures.

It has precisely the same power in promoting humane education.

I wanted at one time to put our work *before 40,000 teachers*. It was done most effectively for \$75.

I wanted to reach the numerous branches of "*The Woman's Christian Temperance Union*." \$75 more did it.

I wanted to reach the "*American Societies of Christian Endeavor*." Another \$75 did that.

Give our "*American Humane Education Society*" money enough, and with it we can—not only reach the nation, but the whole civilized world.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

WHOM THE GODS WOULD DESTROY THEY FIRST MAKE MAD.

[*From September, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

This is an old heathen saying, but it may contain a great truth.

We have just read an account of a magnificent ball given by the *multi-millionaires* at Newport to some of our naval officers—flashing diamonds, etc., etc.—the things used in simple ornamentation insured for \$80,000—another of those foolish public exhibitions of enormous wealth which are arousing the wrath of the millions toiling in our coal mines and elsewhere for wages that barely sustain life. Thank God there are some millionaires *wiser* and *more humane*. If there were not, this great human volcano of ours would have been sending out before this its streams of burning lava.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

FROM LEADING EDUCATORS.

[*From September, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

Among kind letters received by us during the past two months have been not a few from leading educators in different parts of our country. We have only space for the following quotations from a few of them:—

(1) *From Major-General Chamberlain of Maine*: “I read the whole of every number of *Our Dumb Animals*. I believe our people will understand the great education of character you are so steadfastly promoting.”

(2) *From President Carter of Williams College*: “You have done much towards training the rising generation to a true humanity. I wish you God-speed.”

(3) *From Professor Peabody, Dean of the Harvard University Divinity School*: “I am glad to express my sense of the great importance of the work that you have done.”

(4) *From President Brosnahan of Boston College* (Roman Catholic): “There is no paper coming to my office which I read with more interest and pleasure than *Our Dumb Animals*. You have the sympathy of all our Faculty in your efforts to refine the young. May God give you every success.”

(5) *From President Crook of Ohio University*: “Bright, breezy, suggestive — *Our Dumb Animals* — good humor, courage, kindness. May it be long to that day of promotion which shall cancel the last letter of your name.”

(6) *From President Grove of Howard Payne College, Texas*: “The work you are doing will never die. May you be spared many years to carry it on.”

(7) *From President Mitchell of Leland University, New Orleans*: “The beneficent influence of *Our Dumb Animals* and of the ‘Bands of Mercy’ are already beginning to be recognized throughout the civilized world. The blessing of God and the benedictions of all good men will surely attend you.”

(8) *From President Frost of Berea College, Ohio*: “I wish to bid you ‘God-speed’ in your work of mercy. I admire the spirit, energy and success of your Society.”

(9) *From President King of Cornell College, Iowa*: “I could hardly wish a greater benediction for the children of the public schools of America than for your paper to be within the reach of all their pupils.”

(10). *From President Stetson of Des Moines College, Iowa*: “I believe most thoroughly in the noble work of your *American Humane Education Society*.”

(11) *From President Wilder of Illinois Wesleyan University*: “I am increasingly impressed with the far-reaching and wholesome influence of your *American Humane Education Society*.”

(12) *From President McKnight of Pennsylvania College*: “Praying that the choicest blessing may rest on your noble work.”

(13) *From President Whiston of University of Texas*: “I wish *Our Dumb Animals* could be put into the hands of every boy and girl in America.”

To the above we add that we do not publish one in a hundred of the kind letters we receive. We have good reasons for believing that we have thousands of *visible friends* in this world — and, we trust, not a few who *though invisible* to human eyes *may be even stronger*.

“And Elisha prayed, and said, Lord, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the Lord opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain *was full of horses and chariots of fire* round about Elisha.”—*II. Kings* vi: 15 to 17 inclusive.

If our battle is a just one, it may be [while thousands of younger men have been dying around us and our life preserved] that there are *still horses and chariots of fire.*

The founding of our "*American Humane Education Society*" and the formation of *nearly thirty thousand "Bands of Mercy"* in the past few years *may not have been the work of man alone.*

GEO. T. ANGELL.

OUR AUDUBON SOCIETY.

[*From October, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

We are glad to receive an earnest request from our Audubon Society *to aid them* in the protection of our insect-eating birds, and at the same time are somewhat amused—for it seems very much like some new temperance society asking Frances Willard or Neal Dow, or our friend Faxon of Quincy, to take interest in that subject, or like some new convert to Christianity asking the apostles, saints and martyrs to aid in its establishment.

The fact is, dear friends, we commenced working on that subject more than a quarter of a century ago and have been diligently working at it ever since—causing suitable laws to be enacted—posting our placards for bird protection in every city and town and railroad depot of Massachusetts—forming and causing to be formed *nearly thirty thousand "Bands of Mercy,"* with between one and two million members—and sending millions of pages of our humane literature not only over our own state and country but to some extent over the civilized world.

Why, *within the last two months* we have sent out of our office *between fifty and one hundred thousand copies* of Senator Hoar's petition to our Massachusetts Legislature, and perhaps have caused its republication *in millions of copies* of other papers and magazines between Mexico and the North Pole.

Yes, we shall be most glad to help our Audubon Society in every possible way.

Sometimes we get an earnest letter from some ardent anti-vivisectionist asking us to take interest in that subject.

Why, we were at work on that subject long before any anti-vivisection society was heard of in America, and when nine-tenths of our most intelligent people did not even know the meaning of the

word. We remember well being stopped on the street, perhaps twenty years ago, by one of our most learned judges, with the question, "*What is vivisection?*" and before and since that time we have devoted a vast deal of money and effort in circulating information on the subject over our own country and the world.

Nearly twenty years ago [*for the purpose of calling attention to it*] we proposed through all or nearly all our Boston daily papers, the formation of a society to obtain its restriction, but public sentiment had not then sufficiently advanced. We suspect that the Audubon Societies and the American Anti-vivisection Societies are both a part of the fruit of the seed so widely sown.

A PROMINENT BOSTON LAWYER.

[*From October, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

We were told the other day of a humorous remark made at our State House one day by a prominent Boston lawyer in regard to the distinguished temperance advocate, the Rev. Dr. Miner, — namely, that he would have been a very popular man — "*if he would only have let rum alone.*"

We have been *several times* assured that we might have been very popular with our vivisectors — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with the men and women who want to teach vivisection in our public schools and write and publish school books for that purpose — *if we would only have let them alone* — and doubtless we might have been very popular with college rowdies and the men who make gambling bets on college foot-ball games — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with the men who win and lose hundreds of thousands of dollars on gambling horse races and polo games — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with the men who shoot pigeons from traps for sport, and the men and women who cause their horses to be mutilated for life, and break their horses' legs and necks chasing little foxes and anise-seed bags over fences, ditches and stone walls — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with dog-fighters and cock-fighters — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with the people who adulterate our foods and drinks — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with the jingo politicians — *if we would only have let them alone* — and with rascals of all grades and sizes — *if we would only have let them all alone.* In fact, if we would only have

consented to sit on the fence, and say "Good Lord! Good Devil!" to about everybody, and faithfully served the men *whom nobody ought to serve*, and devoted our surplus energies to pitching into foreign nations and foreign heathen *instead of our own*, there is no knowing but instead of being [as we now are] simply a *plain Mr.*, we might have attained to the distinguished honor of being "*the honorable Mr.*" of something from somewhere, and perhaps even had conferred upon us by some college of greater or less note, one of those alphabetical titles which, costing nothing, add so much [as we all know] to the happiness of large numbers of our respected fellow-citizens.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

PLANS MOST IMPORTANT.

[From October, 1897, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

We have already following our *American Humane Education Society* [first of its kind in the world] *The Wisconsin Society*, *The California Society*, and four others now organizing in the United States, and two already organized in Italy, at Rome and Palermo.

We are now planning to have State Societies established in every state—which shall endeavor in their turn to establish branches in every city and town—the Presidents of all State Societies to be Vice-Presidents of our *American Humane Education Society*, and perhaps to meet, *either personally or by delegate*, once a year in a parliament or congress to discuss the best plans of carrying our humane education for the prevention of every form of cruelty and crime, both to human beings and the lower animals, into every nook and corner of America, and so far as possible into all other nations of the world.

Our parent *American Humane Education Society* will be able through contracts for large editions of its humane publications of 50,000 or 100,000 each, to obtain the lowest prices and furnish them to all Humane Societies and "Bands of Mercy" throughout America and the world, at the bare cost of printing. The above is a simple statement of *a part* of the plans of our *American Humane Education Society*.

Of course, how rapidly we may be able to carry out these plans must depend to a considerable extent on the gifts we may receive from friends of our work, and the number of missionary organizers we may be able to employ. Our organizations and publications to

stand on the broad platform of humanity, acceptable alike to all good men and women of every nation who believe in our objects, which are, "*Glory to God, Peace on Earth, Kindness, Justice and Mercy to every Living Creature,*" both human and dumb.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

VIVISECTION.

TWO VERY IMPORTANT QUESTIONS.

[*From October, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

(1.) Will any one kindly inform us whether *during the past twenty-five years* a single new and valuable discovery in medical science has been made through the vivisection of perhaps tens of thousands of living animals in Massachusetts, New England, and the United States? If so, please kindly inform us what it was, and where, when and by whom discovered.

(2.) Will some one kindly inform us whether there has been in New England *during the past twenty-five years* a more distinguished all-around surgeon than Dr. Henry J. Bigelow, Professor of Surgery in Harvard University, who, in his annual address before the Massachusetts Medical Society, said in regard to vivisection:—

"*I have heard it said that 'somebody must do this.' I say it is needless. Nobody should do it. Watch the students at a vivisection. It is the blood and suffering, not the science, that rivets their breathless attention. If hospital service makes young students less tender of suffering, vivisection deadens their humanity and begets indifference to it.*"

A WRITER.

[*From October, 1897, Our Dumb Animals.*]

A writer with good intentions, whom we have never had the pleasure of hearing from before, kindly seeks to instruct us in regard to the best way of managing our "Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals." He evidently is not aware that we wrote its act of incorporation, its constitution, its by-laws, and the state law under which its prosecutions are made—or how it—and its child, our "American Humane Education Society,"—have happened to grow from small beginnings to their present condition of influence over our state, our country, and to some extent the world.

GEO. T. ANGELL

EXTRACTS FROM AN ADDRESS ON THE RELATIONS OF ANIMALS THAT CAN SPEAK TO THOSE THAT ARE DUMB.

TO THE NATIONAL CONVENTION OF THE WOMAN'S CHRISTIAN TEMPER-
ANCE UNION AT NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE, NOVEMBER, 1887.

TWO KINDS OF ARMIES.

“There are two kinds of armies in the world—armies of cruelty and armies of mercy.

Of one kind are the armies of war.

For thousands of years they have been marching onto battle-fields for the purpose of destroying human life.

Personally, the individuals composing those armies have had no cause of offence; *personally*, they might have been friends. Many of them have belonged to the same Christian churches and have been looking forward to an inheritance in the same heaven.

Yet at the command of politicians they have marched onto battle-fields to kill each other, and the armies which could kill the greater number—pile the battle-grounds with the largest heaps of dead and wounded horses and men—have won glorious victories, and costly monuments have been erected to tell future generations *what a noble thing it is for Christian men to kill each other in this way*.

But within the past few years something new has come onto these battle-fields, and the distant spectator looking over the smoke of the battle has seen floating from the top of some high building on either side a flag different from all the rest—a *white flag with a red cross on it*.

What does that mean?

It means *another army* on that battle-field, seeking to save the lives which the others are seeking to destroy—going out with stretchers—bringing in the wounded—binding up the wounds—taking messages to the wives and mothers at home—speaking words of comfort and cheer to the dying.

It is one division of the great army of mercy.

On the stormy nights of winter, when the tempest is on, and the great waves come rolling in on our Atlantic coast, if you could look through the darkness you would see for hundreds of miles

along the coast, strong men, bronzed by exposure to the weather, walking all night long like sentinels up and down, peering out into the darkness.

By and by a vessel—perhaps a great steamer—comes driving ashore. A signal light is flashed, other strong men come hurrying down the coast with life-saving apparatus. If a boat can live, the life-boat is launched and, manned by brave fellows, pulls out into the storm. If a boat cannot live, then a life line is fired over the vessel, a cable is drawn on board, a chair is rigged on the cable, and backward and forward it plies until every passenger and every sailor is saved.

Another division of the great army of mercy.

A fire breaks out to-night here in Nashville in some high building, and the sleepers, suddenly awakened, rush down and out of the building—now the staircase is burning—now a frantic mother discovers that her little child has been left sleeping in the fourth story.

But the fire alarm has sounded—you hear the horses galloping down the street—a ladder is planted against the building, a brave fireman goes up, a stream of water is turned on him to protect him from the flames, he enters the building, he comes to the window with the little child in his arms, he descends the ladder and places it in the arms of its mother.

Another division of the great army of mercy.

And here comes this wonderful organization of yours, seeking to save from worse than wars that murder, or waters that drown, or fires that burn.

What a power it has already. How rapidly it has grown.

What is the secret?

I have read that a certain King once undertook to build a temple to the Almighty, and that *he* might have all the glory to himself alone, commanded that no one should be permitted to help. When completed, he directed that *his name* should be inscribed on the wall to stand forever as the giver. But in the night an angel came and erased his name from the wall, and wrote in place of it the name of a poor widow.

The King in wrath commanded the widow to come before him, and demanded what she had done toward the building of the temple. With fear she answered: 'I loved the Lord and wanted to do something to help build His house; but you had commanded otherwise, so *I only gave a few wisps of hay to the horses that drew the stones.*' And the King commanded that her name should remain

where the angel had written it, because *she had worked for the glory of God*, while he had worked only for his own.

And there, my friends, is the secret of this great organization of yours. While politicians all over this country are sitting on their political fences, crying out, *good Lord!—good Devil!* (for we don't know whose hands we are going to fall into)—here comes this great army of Christian women marching under the banner of the cross, without one selfish purpose or thought, *seeking only the glory of God and the welfare of mankind.*

If one with God is a majority, what are two hundred thousand?

Wise, I think, will be the party that recognizes the power of two hundred thousand Christian women marching under the banner of the cross, and foolish, I think, as Belshazzar, when the fingers of a hand wrote on his palace wall, will be the party that tries to ignore it."

WHY I HAVE COME TO NASHVILLE.

"It is because I recognize not only the power of your great organization, but *the power that stands behind it*, that I have come all the way from Boston to Nashville to ask *in behalf of those that cannot ask for themselves*, that in the building of your temple to the glory of Almighty God, *the claims of the innumerable millions of his lower creatures* shall not be forgotten.

But why should I come to speak for His *lower* creatures rather than human?

There are a thousand to speak for the human, for one to speak for the lower.

Up to a few years ago there was not on this whole continent *one effective law to protect them*, or *one voice to plead their cause.*"

* * * * *

DO ANIMALS SUFFER?

"I need not tell you that animals suffer.

Eight hundred thousand cattle are reported to have died on our Western plains last winter.

Starved to death because their owners provided no food—*frozen to death* because they provided no shelter.

The bones of those 800,000 cattle lie bleaching on the plains to-day.

When I visited New Orleans, one of the first to call upon me was the agricultural editor of one of the leading papers of that city, a most highly respected planter.

He told me of the cruelties practiced in the *Southern States*, and before leaving said, "*I believe, Mr. Angell, the curse of God is on my State for the cruelty inflicted here on dumb animals.*"

I heard the same story in Florida. I hear it wherever I go.

Hundreds of thousands die in transportation on the cars every year for want of food, water and rest, and the flesh of many of them is sold in our markets.

Hundreds of thousands are slaughtered in ways most barbarous, when all *could be killed without foreknowledge and almost without pain.*

I have stood in slaughter-houses and witnessed scenes that compelled me to leave or drop fainting on the floor—hundreds of animals compelled to stand and see others slaughtered, knowing their turn was coming next.

Hundreds of thousands of young calves are taken every year from their mothers *when too young to eat hay*, and kept without food three to six days before they are slaughtered, and in the mean time in some parts of our country they *are bled from one to three times* to get all the blood out of them and make their flesh look very white and delicate.

I need not go out of my own State to find plenty of cruelty.

My attention was called to the subject many years ago.

A gentle, high-spirited horse, which I had never struck with a whip in my life, was loaned by the man who took care of him to two young men to be driven with great care, a short distance.

They stopped at a tavern, got drunk, and drove the poor creature almost to death.

He was brought back into the door-yard, covered with sweat and foam, so weak he could hardly stand, and with such a look of despair in his eyes as I never saw in either human or animal eyes *before*, and *hope* never to see again.

It was only by working almost the entire night that his life was saved.

There was then no law to punish the men who did it, or the man who sold them the rum that made them do it.

In my town near Boston a valuable stock of cattle were left by one man in charge of another. He quarreled with the owner and out of revenge locked the stable doors, and starved all the cattle to

death in their stalls. The neighbors broke into the stable and found the cattle lying dead there, and where they had gnawed the wood-work in the vain effort to sustain life.

There was no law in the State of Massachusetts under which he could be punished.

I was walking in early spring in a town near Boston and saw driven out of the yard of a rich woman a cow that was only a skeleton. It could hardly walk.

I asked what was the matter, and they told me that it was the custom of that rich woman to keep her cow, all winter, almost at the point of starvation, to *save the cost of hay*.

There was no law in Massachusetts to prevent her doing it.

I was calling upon people in Milton, near Boston, one day and they told me how their old family dog had just been killed.

They wouldn't kill him themselves because they loved him so.

So they hired boys to do it and furnished them a revolver.

The boys tied a rope around the old dog's neck, dragged him to the woods, tied him to a tree, fired every barrel of the revolver into him without killing him, and then beat him to death with sticks and stones.

I am glad to say that the Society with which I have the honor to be connected now employs men to kill every one of these dumb animals in and about Boston: horses, dogs, and cats, mercifully, and we send out directions to our agents all over the State, and to our 'Bands of Mercy' and others, widely throughout the country, to enable them to kill mercifully."

WHY HAVE THESE CRUELITIES BEEN PERMITTED?

"Why have there, from the discovery of America to the past few years, been no laws for the protection of God's dumb creatures?"

I answer, because nobody has been taught by the press, the pulpit or in the schools that such laws ought to be enacted, or that dumb animals were entitled to protection."

BEGUN WITH PRAYER.

"Our Massachusetts Society, like your organization, was begun with prayer.

At the close of the meeting at which it was organized, its Presi-

dent and honorary Secretary went to an office underneath, and with a deep sense of responsibility knelt and asked God to bless it.

Our first appeal to the public closed with these words: '*This Society has a great work before it, and it earnestly asks the aid and prayers of every man and woman in Massachusetts who believes in God and has sympathy for his suffering creatures.*'"

* * * * *

SPECIAL PROVIDENCES.

"Some things have seemed like *special providences*.

At the very start, when we were looking around to see where we could get funds—through a circumstance for the occurring of which there was *not one chance in a million*, the city of Boston placed under my orders for three weeks, seventeen policemen selected carefully from the whole force, *to canvass the entire city, at the city's expense, to raise funds for our Society.*

Just as I was going to press with two hundred thousand copies of the first number of '*Our Dumb Animals*,'—which was the first paper of its kind in the world—and had failed to secure promised evidence of the horrible cruelties practiced in our Brighton slaughter-houses, because the persons who had promised *were afraid to give it*—*just at the last moment, when I could delay no longer, a butcher who had run one of those slaughter-houses twenty years, came voluntarily to my office, paid me ten dollars to join the Society, and enabled me to print in two hundred thousand copies of our paper the facts which led to the abolition of those slaughter-houses, and the substitution of our merciful abattoir.*

It was a conversion almost as remarkable as that of Saul of Tarsus.

The tears came into my eyes when this man told me who he was, and why he had come. I said, '*Who do you suppose sent you here?*' 'He didn't know'—'*He kind of thought he would come in.*' I said, '*I know who sent you.*'

There have been other circumstances quite as remarkable—at home—and when I crossed the ocean—the circumstances which led to the formation of the Ladies' Humane Educational Committee of England with the Baroness Burdett-Coutts as President—the circumstances which led that eminent Christian woman and good friend of mine, Catharine Smithies, of London, to form the first '*Band of*

Mercy' in the world. She wrote me shortly before she died, '*I believe that teaching to be kind to the lower animals is preparing the way for the gospel of Christ.*'—The circumstances which led to the publication of the '*London Animal World*,' which I had the pleasure of helping name, and which now goes wherever the British flag floats to plead for God's lower creatures.

There have been many occurrences in connection with this work which seemed like special providences."

NOW WHY HAVE I COME TO NASHVILLE?

"Soon after our Society was organized, a ruffian was found on a highway near Boston beating his *employer's* tired and panting horses with a stake taken from his brick wagon, because they could not draw the load over an obstruction in the highway.

He had struck them more than *forty* blows with the stake before a humane gentleman came with an officer to arrest him.

When he saw the officer coming he said to the horses, with an oath, '*I'll stop now, but when I get you into the brick-yard I'll pay you off then.*'

It is clear that if we want to protect *dumb* animals, *that cannot testify*, we must have something that will reach into the brick-yard—and there is only one thing that will do it—and that is humane education—humane education of the children all over this country—humane education of the parents *through the children.*"

* * * * *

"I might speak of the gratitude we owe to these lower creatures and to God who created them—for the services they render and the happiness they bring into our lives.

I might occupy half an hour in telling of the happiness *that is added to human lives* by love for the lower creatures. No man can measure the happiness which came into the lives of such men as Sir Walter Scott and Sir Edwin Landseer through their love of dogs—or into the lives of Cardinal Wolsey and Cardinal Richelieu through their love of cats, or into the life of Daniel Webster from his love of cattle. Just before he died at Marshfield, when he found he was about to die, he requested that all his cattle should be driven to his window that he might see them for the last time, and as they came, one by one, to his window, he called each by name. Ernest Von

Vogelweide, the great lyric poet of the middle ages, so loved the birds that he left a large bequest to the monks of Wurtzburg, *on condition that they should feed the birds every day on the tombstone over his grave.*

There is no man, or child, or woman, rich or poor, that may not be made happier by the love of these lower creatures.

If you would add to the *happiness of children* then through life, teach them to say kind words and do kind acts to the lower creatures."

THE GROWTH AND PREVENTION OF CRIME.

"But there is another thought which I think will strongly impress *this audience.*

There has been in this country in the past twenty years a vast increase of crime — far beyond our growth of population.

I could give you statistics, but it would make this address too long.

And it is becoming a great question with good citizens *how we are going to stop this increase of crime.*

The churches alone cannot stop it, for they do not reach the great masses who never attend them.

It is said that all the churches in New York city, with every seat filled, will not seat over 250,000, while the population is about 1,400,000.

I have seen recently that out of about *sixteen* millions of children in this country of school age, only about seven millions attend the Sunday-schools.

What will stop the increase of crime?

You will say *temperance.* I answer yes.

Temperance, and *more cultivation of the hearts of children;* and there is not in the whole range of human thought a better or more practicable way of cultivating the hearts of children *than by teaching them kindness to God's lower creatures.*

There are hundreds of thousands of parents among the depraved and criminal classes of this country whom no child *can* be taught to love or *ought* to be.

There are hundreds of thousands of homes where the name of the Almighty is never heard, *except in words of blasphemy.*

But there is *not* a child in one of those homes that may not be taught to feed the birds and pat the horses and enjoy making happy

all harmless creatures it meets, and so be doing acts of kindness a hundred times a day, that will make it not only happier and better, but more merciful in all the relations of life."

* * * * *

"*All the criminals of the future are children now; the anarchists, the men who may throw railroad trains off the track, or put dynamite under our churches, or burn half a city some windy night.*

They are all children now and we are educating them.

Shall we give them an education of mercy or not?

All the Governors and Legislators and Presidents of the future *are children now*; the men in whose hands will be the great questions of peace and war.

Shall we train them in thoughts and habits of mercy or not?

It was such thoughts as these that induced your devoted President, Frances E. Willard, to write me in a recent letter, '*I look upon your mission as a sacred one, not second to any founded in the name of Christ.*'"

* * * * *

"My friends, I *pray* you in behalf of the innumerable millions, for whom, *because they cannot speak for themselves*, I have come here to speak, that wherever the flag of your great organization shall float *you will carry with it the teachings of kindness and mercy to God's lower creatures.*"



AN IMPORTANT ADDITION.

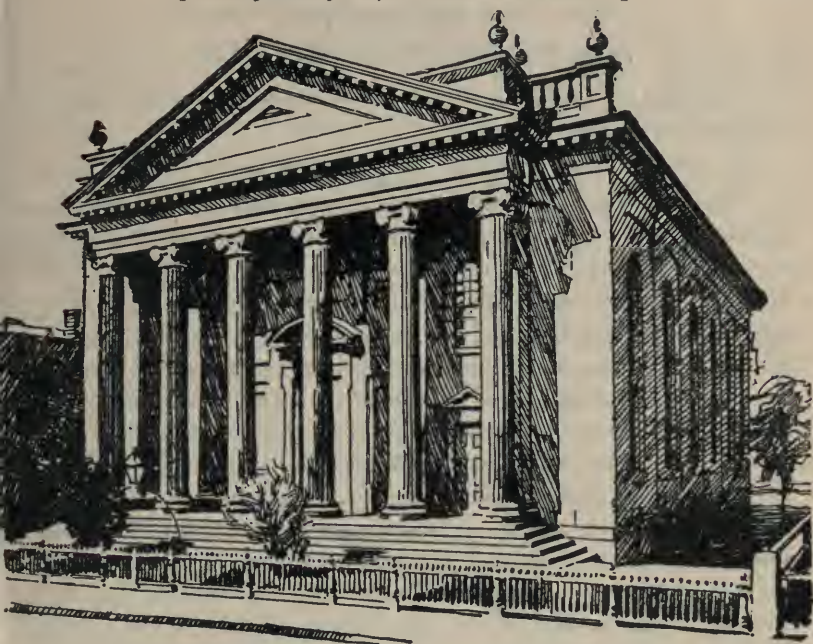


On page 35 of first appendix to this little volume will be found the reasons why I caused it to be largely published during my lifetime. But to what is there said should be added that its circulation during the past few years has added largely to the funds of our "*American Humane Education Society*," by reason of which our work has been largely increased and we have been enabled [*among other things*] to raise the number of our "*Bands of Mercy*" to nearly 30,000—the circulation of "*Black Beauty*" to over two millions copies—to increase our missionaries—and send "*Our Dumb Animals*" every month to every newspaper and magazine in America north of Mexico.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

Boston, October, 1897.

[From January, 1898, *Our Dumb Animals*.]



OLD CHURCH OF THE UNITY, WEST NEWTON STREET, BOSTON.

PROBABLY THE FIRST CHURCH IN THE WORLD.

By kind permission of the *Boston Herald* we give our readers a picture of the "*Church of the Unity*," Boston, from whose pulpit we had the pleasure of giving *on Sunday, May 21st, 1871*, the first address [so far as we have been able to ascertain] on the duty of protecting dumb animals from cruelty *ever given by a layman on Lord's day from any Christian pulpit in the world*. Since that time we have stood in the pulpits of nearly every Christian denomination—including the Episcopal—and before the altar in the Roman Catholic church—and many times have spoken to large union meetings of churches of various denominations, but this was the first church [so far as we know] in the world from whose pulpit an address on this subject was ever given *on Lord's day* by any other than a clergyman.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

A PROPHECY.

[From February, 1898, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

We take the following from the *Boston Daily Evening Transcript* of March 30th, 1889 :

THE MOST IMPORTANT DISCOVERY OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.

The future historian will tell his readers that the most important discovery of the nineteenth century—more important than all discoveries in the art of war, all armor-clad vessels, all guns, fortifications and cannon—more important than all telegraph wires and all the applied powers of steam and electricity—more important than all prisons and penitentiaries—was the discovery of the simple fact *that the tap roots of all wars and murders and cruelty and crime could be cut off by simply teaching and leading every child to seize every opportunity to say a kind word or do a kind act that should make some other human being or dumb creature happier*. That on the continent of North America, in the city of Boston, on the 16th day of January, 1889, was organized the first incorporated society in the world—*The American Humane Education Society*—for the specific object of awakening the world to the importance of this discovery—that through the American press, by prizes and otherwise, it succeeded in attracting the attention, sympathy and aid of Christians, patriots and philanthropists of all nations—that through its “*Bands of Mercy*” and an immense free distribution of humane literature it succeeded in reaching the children, not only in every American school, but also in every American home—that in all the schools, prizes and honors were given to those that most excelled in acts of kindness—that *the children of the criminal classes were reached, because every criminal, by the commission of crime, forfeited the right of custody of his children, which were taken by State Boards of Charities and placed in surroundings suitable to make them good citizens*—that a public sentiment was built up which made the rich kind to the poor, the poor kind to the rich, and all crimes and cruelties infamous, and so in process of time every form of unnecessary human and animal suffering was relieved, and wars, cruelty and crime banished, *because every child was taught in all public, private and Sunday-schools, and in a hundred thousand free kindergartens, supported at public expense, to make its own life happier by seizing every opportunity to say a kind word or do a kind act that should make happier the lives of others, both human and dumb, and that the highest honors of the state and nation were due to those who did the most to increase the nation’s happiness*.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

“INFERNAL INTELLECT.”

[From November, 1897, *Our Dumb Animals*.]

In 1876 we had the pleasure of addressing the great Biennial National Unitarian Conference, held once in two years at Saratoga Springs, for the purpose of bringing before that denomination the claims of the lower animals. While waiting for our turn to speak, the question of building a Unitarian church in Washington, D. C., came before the convention, and the distinguished Rev. Dr. Bellows, of New York city, in advocating it said “that there was probably no place in the known world where could be found a greater gathering of ‘*infernal intellect*’ than at Washington.”

We wonder whether what Dr. Bellows said in regard to Washington is not coming too true over a large part of our whole country, *and what our colleges and educational institutions are doing to prevent it*. We can hardly take up a newspaper in this month of October without reading of *college* foot-ball and base-ball fights [with gambling accompaniments] or some other kind of fights between colleges, or between classes in the same colleges. And then we read of biological studies in colleges which require all students, *as a part of their education*, to dissect cats, and how cat farms are being established near these colleges to raise animals for the use of the students—and how the same education is being carried not only into our colleges and higher schools, but also in many cases even into our grammar schools; and then how our millionaires are pouring their gifts into educational institutions to increase this education, and *we wonder what all this business is coming to in the next generation*, or what the benefit would have been to us if *President Lincoln*, *Charles Sumner*, *Daniel Webster*, and other distinguished men, north and south, had been similarly educated.

And there seems to be growing up all over our country a love of fighting—more battle-ships, more armed cruisers, more torpedo boats, more great guns, more military training in our schools. The newspapers say that we are going to take the Sandwich Islands, and there is some talk of our buying a part of Greenland, and it is even suggested that we buy the Island of Madeira on the other side of the Atlantic, while at the same time we are proclaiming to the world *that no other nation shall ever acquire by purchase or otherwise a single acre of territory in this western hemisphere*.

There were *nearly eleven thousand murders* in our country last year, while in England and Wales there were during the same length of time year before last only *one hundred and sixty-three*.

We wonder what all this is coming to, and what our colleges and educational institutions and *our Christian churches even* are doing to hasten the coming of “*peace on earth*” and [saying nothing of the lower creatures] “*good will to men*.”

But while we wonder we shall continue to work *with such means as we can obtain* [so long as we have power to work] to send out into all our schools the teachings of peace and mercy which seem to us best calculated to promote civilization and humanity, the prosperity of our country, the protection of property and life, *and to make the world happier and better*.

GEO. T. ANGELL.

THE MAGNITUDE OF OUR WORK.

- (1) Over *thirty-three thousand* "Bands of Mercy" in our own country, British America and elsewhere.
- (2) *More than two millions* copies of "*Black Beauty*" in our own and various European and Asiatic languages.
- (3) *Millions of copies* of our other humane publications.
- (4) *Over one hundred and seventeen millions of pages* of humane literature printed in a single year.
- (5) Thousands of dollars offered in prizes to the press, to colleges, to story writers, essayists, and others.
- (6) "*Our Dumb Animals*" sent regularly not only to all professional men and thousands of others in our own State, but to writers, speakers, congressmen and others, over our whole country and elsewhere, and every month into *over twenty thousand editorial offices*, including all in North America north of Mexico.

GEO. T. ANGELL, *President.*

THE CIRCULATION OF "OUR DUMB ANIMALS."

WE PRINT EACH MONTH BETWEEN 50,000 AND 60,000, AND SOMETIMES A MUCH LARGER NUMBER.

TO WHOM DOES "*Our Dumb Animals*" GO EACH MONTH?

In the State.

1. All members of our two Humane Societies.
2. Several thousands of Boston business firms and men.
3. All Massachusetts clergy, Protestant and Roman Catholic.
4. All Massachusetts lawyers.
5. All Massachusetts physicians.
6. All Massachusetts bank presidents and cashiers.
7. All Massachusetts postmasters.
8. All Massachusetts school superintendents.
9. Large numbers of writers, speakers and teachers throughout the State.
10. About 500 of the Society's agents in almost every Massachusetts city and town.
11. "Bands of Mercy" throughout the State.
12. Many subscribers and others throughout the State.
13. The Boston police.
14. The Massachusetts legislature.
15. Hundreds of coachmen, drivers and teamsters.
16. *The editors of all Massachusetts publications.*
17. Many newspaper reporters.

Outside the State.

18. All our Humane Societies throughout the entire world.
 19. Large numbers of subscribers in our own and foreign countries.
 20. Thousands of our "*Bands of Mercy*" in our own and other countries.
 21. Members of our National Congress.
 22. *Presidents of all American Colleges and Universities north of Mexico.*
 23. Writers, speakers, teachers and many others in various States and Territories.
 24. *The editors of over twenty thousand American newspapers and other publications, including all in our own country and British America.*
- Of these *over twenty thousand* we have good reasons for believing that not less than nineteen thousand, and *perhaps more*, are read *either by editors or by their wives and children.*

THE DIFFERENCE.

Our "*Massachusetts Society*," in addition to obtaining and enforcing laws and doing a *great variety of other work*, widely circulates our humane publications in Massachusetts, and to some extent outside the State.

Our "*American Humane Education Society*" publishes and circulates all our prize stories and "*The Humane Horse Book*"—offers many prizes for humane objects—supports missionaries—*forms annually thousands of new* "*Bands of Mercy*"—and in addition to other widely extended humane work, pays for a vast circulation of "*Our Dumb Animals*" and other humane publications *outside the State. Its Directors hold office for life*—when one dies another is elected.

Each Society has, by special act of our Legislature, power to hold half a million of dollars. The "*Massachusetts Society*," being the older, has thus far received by wills and otherwise much larger sums than the "*American Humane Education Society*." But the latter is now beginning to attract wide attention throughout our own country and elsewhere, and has already, through the gifts of its President and others, laid the foundation of a permanent fund to insure its great future.

1854 8 -3

370.92 A583A c.1

Angell

Autobiographical sketches

OISE



3 0005 02036631 9

370.92

A583A

Angell

Autobiographical sketches and
personal recollections

370.92

A583A

Angell

Autobiographical sketches and personal
recollections

